## Quantum Field Theory for Mathematicians Spring 2024 Course Notes Under Construction

Peter Woit Department of Mathematics, Columbia University woit@math.columbia.edu

March 4, 2024

©2024 Peter Woit All rights reserved.

# Contents

1	$\mathbf{Intr}$	oducti	on	1
2	Clas 2.1 2.2	Hamilt Lagran 2.2.1	Mechanics conian mechanics	<b>2</b> 2 5 8
3	Intr	oducti	on to Quantization	10
	3.1	Canon	ical quantization: some examples	10
		3.1.1	The free particle	11
		3.1.2	The harmonic oscillator	12
	3.2	The sp	$\frac{1}{2}$ quantum system	13
	3.3	Quanti	ization and representation theory	15
		3.3.1	Dirac quantization as a Lie algebra representation	15
		3.3.2	Some generalities about quantization and representation	
			theory	16
<b>4</b>	Can	onical	quantization: bosons	17
	4.1	The H	eisenberg group and its representations	17
		4.1.1	The Heisenberg Lie algebra and Lie group	18
		4.1.2	The Schrödinger representation	19
		4.1.3	The Stone-von Neumann theorem	20
		4.1.4	The Bargmann-Fock representation	22
		4.1.5	The Weyl algebra	23
		4.1.6	The Heisenberg group and symplectic geometry	24
	4.2	The sy	mplectic group and the oscillator representation	26
		4.2.1	The Poisson bracket and the Lie algebras $\mathfrak{h}_{2n+1}$ and $\mathfrak{sp}(2n, \mathbf{R})$	26
		4.2.2	The Schrödinger model for the oscillator representation .	27
		4.2.3	The Bargmann-Fock model for the oscillator representation	29
		4.2.4	The symplectic group and automorphisms of the Heisen-	
			berg Lie group	30
	4.3	Choice	of polarization	32
		4.3.1	Real polarizations and the Schrödinger representation	32

	4.4	4.3.2 Complex polarizations	32 36			
<b>5</b>	Can	Canonical quantization: fermions				
	5.1	Anticommuting Variables and Pseudo-classical Mechanics	38			
		5.1.1 The Grassmann algebra of polynomials on anticommuting	20			
		5.1.2 Provide allogated machanics and the fermionic Deisson breaket	38			
		5.1.2 F seudo-classical mechanics and the leftmonic Foisson bracket	40 41			
	5.2	Clifford Algebras	43			
	0	5.2.1 Real Clifford algebras	44			
		5.2.2 Clifford algebras and geometry	45			
		5.2.3 Complex Clifford algebras	49			
	5.3	Fermionic Quantization and Spinors	51			
		5.3.1 Quantization of pseudo-classical systems	51			
		5.3.2 Two examples	53			
		5.3.3 The Schrödinger representation for fermions: ghosts	57			
		5.3.4 Spinors and the Bargmann-Fock construction	59			
		5.3.5 Complex structures, $U(d) \subset SO(2d)$ and the spinor rep-	<u> </u>			
	E 4	resentation	62 62			
	0.4	5.4.1 Classical theory Lie groups and Lie algebras	00 63			
		5.4.1 Classical theory, the groups and the algebras	00 63			
		5.4.2 Quantum incory and representations	64			
	5.5	For further reading	65			
	0.0		00			
6	Free	e particles in three space dimensions	67			
	6.1	Irreducible representations of the Euclidean group $E_3 \ldots \ldots$	67			
	6.2	The Dirac operator and spin $\frac{1}{2}$	69			
7	Non	relativistic quantum field theory	71			
1	7 1	Oscillators and quantum fields	72			
	7.1	Ouantum fields as operator-valued distributions	74			
	7.3	Dynamics of quantum fields	76			
	7.4	Anti-particles	78			
	7.5	The propagator	79			
	7.6	Euclidean quantum field theory	80			
	7.7	Propagators and Green's functions	82			
	7.8	On and off mass-shell quantum fields	85			
	7.9	For further reading	85			
8	Qua	ntization of infinite dimensional phase spaces	86			
-	8.1	Inequivalent irreducible representations	86			
	8.2	The restricted symplectic group	87			
	8.3	The anomaly and the Schwinger term	88			
	8.4	Spontaneous symmetry breaking	89			

	8.5	For further reading	90
9	Gau	ussian integrals and path integral quantization	91
	9.1	Gaussian integrals	91
	9.2	Perturbation theory	92
	9.3	Complex and fermionic cases	94
	9.4	The path integral for non-relativistic quantum field theory	94
	9.5	Path integrals in general	95
	9.6	For further reading	97
10	Geo	metry in 4 dimensions: vectors, spinors and twistors	98
	10.1	Complex spacetime	100
		10.1.1 Vectors	100
		10.1.2 Spinors	100
		10.1.3 The Clifford algebra and antisymmetric tensors	101
		10.1.4 Twistors	101
	10.2	Real forms	104
		10.2.1 Real forms of complex representations	104
		10.2.2 The signature $(2, 2)$ real form $\ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots \ldots$	105
		10.2.3 The signature $(4, 0)$ real form: Euclidean spacetime	106
		10.2.4 The (3, 1) real form: Minkowski spacetime	111
	10.3	For further reading	114
11	The	Poincaré group and its representations	115
11	<b>The</b> 11.1	Poincaré group and its representations The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra	<b>115</b> 115
11	The 11.1 11.2	Poincaré group and its representations The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra	<b>115</b> 115 116
11	The 11.1 11.2 11.3	Poincaré group and its representations The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra	<b>115</b> 115 116 117
11	The 11.1 11.2 11.3	<ul> <li>Poincaré group and its representations</li> <li>The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra</li></ul>	<b>115</b> 115 116 117 118
11	<b>The</b> 11.1 11.2 11.3	<ul> <li>Poincaré group and its representations</li> <li>The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra</li></ul>	<b>115</b> 115 116 117 118 119
11	<b>The</b> 11.1 11.2 11.3	<ul> <li>Poincaré group and its representations</li> <li>The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra</li></ul>	<ol> <li>115</li> <li>115</li> <li>116</li> <li>117</li> <li>118</li> <li>119</li> <li>119</li> </ol>
11	The 11.1 11.2 11.3	<ul> <li>Poincaré group and its representations</li> <li>The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra</li></ul>	<b>115</b> 115 116 117 118 119 119 120
11	The 11.1 11.2 11.3	<ul> <li>Poincaré group and its representations</li> <li>The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra</li></ul>	<b>115</b> 115 116 117 118 119 119 120 120
11	The 11.1 11.2 11.3	Poincaré group and its representations         The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1         Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2         Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3         Space-like orbits         11.3.4         The zero orbit         11.3.5         Positive energy null orbits	<b>115</b> 115 116 117 118 119 119 120 120 121
11	The 11.1 11.2 11.3	Poincaré group and its representationsThe Poincaré group and its Lie algebraIrreducible representations of the Poincaré groupClassification of representations by orbits11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits11.3.3 Space-like orbits11.3.4 The zero orbit11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits11.3.6 Negative energy null orbitsFor further reading	<b>115</b> 115 116 117 118 119 119 120 120 121 122
11	The 11.1 11.2 11.3 11.4	Poincaré group and its representations         The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3 Space-like orbits         11.3.4 The zero orbit         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         For further reading         Ativistic scalar quantum fields	<b>1115</b> 1115 1116 1117 1118 119 119 120 120 121 122 122 <b>123</b>
11 12	11.4 11.4 11.4 11.4	<b>Poincaré group and its representations</b> The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3 Space-like orbits         11.3.4 The zero orbit         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         For further reading         Ativistic scalar quantum fields         The Klein-Gordon equation	<b>115</b> 115 116 117 118 119 120 120 121 122 <b>123</b> 123
11 12	The 11.1 11.2 11.3 11.4 <b>Rela</b> 12.1 12.2	<b>Poincaré group and its representations</b> The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3 Space-like orbits         11.3.4 The zero orbit         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         For further reading         Ativistic scalar quantum fields         The Klein-Gordon equation         Canonical quantization	<pre>115 115 116 117 118 119 120 120 121 122 123 123</pre>
11	The 11.1 11.2 11.3 11.4 2 Rela 12.1 12.2 12.3	<b>Poincaré group and its representations</b> The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3 Space-like orbits         11.3.4 The zero orbit         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         For further reading         Ativistic scalar quantum fields         The Klein-Gordon equation         Propagators	<pre>115 115 116 117 118 119 120 120 121 122 123 123 123</pre>
11	11.4 11.4 11.4 <b>Rela</b> 12.1 12.2 12.3 12.4	<b>Poincaré group and its representations</b> The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1         Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2         Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3         Space-like orbits         11.3.4         The zero orbit         11.3.5         Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6         Negative energy null orbits         For further reading         The Klein-Gordon equation         Canonical quantization         Propagators         Scalar fields	<pre>115 115 116 117 118 119 120 120 121 122 123 123 123 123</pre>
11	11.4 11.4 <b>Rel</b> 12.1 12.3 12.4 12.5	<b>Poincaré group and its representations</b> The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3 Space-like orbits         11.3.4 The zero orbit         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         For further reading         Ativistic scalar quantum fields         The Klein-Gordon equation         Propagators         Scalar fields         Interacting theory	<b>115</b> 115 116 117 118 119 120 120 121 122 <b>123</b> 123 123 123 123 123
11	<ul> <li>The 11.1</li> <li>11.2</li> <li>11.3</li> <li>11.4</li> <li>Relation 12.1</li> <li>12.2</li> <li>12.3</li> <li>12.4</li> <li>12.5</li> <li>12.6</li> </ul>	<b>Poincaré group and its representations</b> The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3 Space-like orbits         11.3.4 The zero orbit         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         11.3.7 For further reading         11.3.8 The zero orbit         11.3.9 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.10 Negative energy null orbits         11.3.2 Negative energy null orbits         11.3.4 The zero orbit         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         11.3.7 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.8 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.9 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.1 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.2 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy nul	<b>1115</b> 1115 1116 1117 118 119 120 120 121 122 <b>123</b> 123 123 123 123 123 123
11	<ul> <li>The 11.1</li> <li>11.2</li> <li>11.3</li> <li>11.4</li> <li>Relation 12.1</li> <li>12.2</li> <li>12.3</li> <li>12.4</li> <li>12.5</li> <li>12.6</li> <li>12.7</li> </ul>	<b>Poincaré group and its representations</b> The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3 Space-like orbits         11.3.4 The zero orbit         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         11.3.7 For further reading         Ativistic scalar quantum fields         The Klein-Gordon equation         Propagators         Scalar fields         Interacting theory         Perturbation theory: evaluating Feynman diagrams         Perturbation theory: renormalization	<b>1115</b> 1115 1116 1117 118 119 120 120 121 122 <b>123</b> 123 123 123 123 127 127
11	<ul> <li>The 11.1</li> <li>11.2</li> <li>11.3</li> <li>11.4</li> <li>Relation 12.1</li> <li>12.2</li> <li>12.3</li> <li>12.4</li> <li>12.5</li> <li>12.6</li> <li>12.7</li> <li>12.8</li> </ul>	<b>Poincaré group and its representations</b> The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra         Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group         Classification of representations by orbits         11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits         11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits         11.3.3 Space-like orbits         11.3.4 The zero orbit         11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits         Scalar quantum fields         The Klein-Gordon equation         Propagators         Scalar fields         Interacting theory         Perturbation theory: evaluating Feynman diagrams         Perturbation theory: renormalization	<b>1115</b> 1115 1116 1117 118 119 120 120 121 122 <b>123</b> 123 123 123 123 127 127 127

13 Spinor fields	133
14 Geometry	137
14.1 Connections and curvature for principal bundles and vector bundle	s137
14.2 Frame bundles and Riemannian geometry	137
15 Quantization of gauge fields	138
15.1 Abelian gauge theory in four dimensions: photons	138
15.2 Non-abelian gauge theory and the Yang-Mills action	138
15.3 Lattice gauge theory	138
16 The Standard Model	139
16.1 Quantum electrodynamics	139
16.2 Electroweak theory and the Higgs mechanism	139
16.3 Quantum chromodynamics	139
16.4 Acknowledgements	139

## Chapter 1

# Introduction

These notes are a work in progress, course notes for a spring 2024 "Topics in Representation Theory" course oriented towards explaining quantum mechanics, quantum field theory, and the Standard Model to mathematicians, emphasizing the relations to representation theory. A sizable part of the early version of these notes is an extract from notes on material covered in a spring 2023 graduate course on Lie groups and representations at Columbia University. For the full version of those notes, see https://www.math.columbia.edu/~woit/LieGroups-2023/qmnumbertheory.pdf.

## Chapter 2

## **Classical Mechanics**

The classical mechanics description of a physical system involves an "equation of motion", a differential equation which determines the state of the system at later times given its state at some initial time. There are two quite different formalisms used for this purpose, the Hamiltonian and Lagrangian. In this chapter we'll outline the Hamiltonian version, which is closely related to Lie algebras, and then discuss the Lagrangian version.

### 2.1 Hamiltonian mechanics

In the Hamiltonian formalism, the state of a physical system at a given time is determined by a point in a space called "phase space". The equation of motion is a first order equation in time determined by a function on phase space called the "Hamiltonian." One can also think of phase space as the space of solutions of the equation of motion.

In the cases we are most interested in, phase space is an even dimensional vector space  $P = \mathbf{R}^{2n}$ , with coordinates  $q_j, p_j$  for  $j = 1, 2, \dots, n$ . Then one can define:

**Definition** (Poisson bracket). The Poisson bracket of two functions  $f_1, f_2$  on P is the function

$$\{f_1, f_2\} = \sum_{j=1}^n \left(\frac{\partial f_1}{\partial q_j}\frac{\partial f_2}{\partial p_j} - \frac{\partial f_2}{\partial q_j}\frac{\partial f_1}{\partial p_j}\right)$$

Given a Hamiltonian function h on P, the time dependence of any function f on P will satisfy

$$\frac{df}{dt} = \{f, h\}$$

In particular, for coordinate functions, one gets Hamilton's equations

$$\dot{q}_j = \{q_j, h\} = \frac{\partial h}{\partial p_j}$$

$$\dot{p}_j = \{p_j, h\} = -\frac{\partial h}{\partial q_j}$$

These are the equations of motion in Hamiltonian form. For  $h = \frac{1}{2m} |\mathbf{p}|^2 + V(\mathbf{q})$  (V is the potential energy) these give the elementary physics definition of the momentum

$$\mathbf{p} = m\dot{\mathbf{q}}$$

and Newton's second law

$$\dot{\mathbf{p}} = m\ddot{\mathbf{q}} = -\nabla V$$

The Poisson bracket can easily be seen to satisfy the following properties:

• Antisymmetry:

$$\{f_1, f_2\} = -\{f_2, f_1\}$$

• Jacobi identity:

$$\{f_1, \{f_2, f_3\}\} + \{f_3, \{f_1, f_2\}\} + \{f_2, \{f_3, f_1\}\} = 0$$

• Leibniz rule (derivation property)

$$\{f_1, f_2 f_3\} = \{f_1, f_2\}f_3 + f_2\{f_1, f_3\}$$

The first two properties imply that the Poisson bracket provides a Lie algebra structure on the space of functions on P. This is an infinite-dimensional Lie algebra.

We'll mainly be interested in the case where P is a linear space, but the whole formalism works equally well for a manifold of the following kind:

**Definition** (Symplectic manifold). A symplectic manifold P is a manifold with a two-form  $\omega \in \Omega^2(P)$  such that:

- $\omega$  is non-degenerate. At each  $p \in P$  it gives an isomorphism between tangent vectors and cotangent vectors.
- $\omega$  is closed:  $d\omega = 0$

For the case of  $P = \mathbf{R}^{2n}$  and its standard Poisson bracket, one has

$$\omega = \sum_{j=1}^{n} (dq_j \otimes dp_j - dp_j \otimes dq_j) = \sum_{j=1}^{n} dq_j \wedge dp_j$$

Note that, up to a change of coordinates, this is the unique antisymmetric nondegenerate bilinear form on  $\mathbb{R}^{2n}$ . This is analogous to the case of Riemannian geometry, where instead the inner product provides a non-degenerate symmetric bilinear form, and this analogy will play an important role later.

A simple non-linear example of a symplectic manifold is given by  $P = S^2$ , with  $\omega$  the area two-form. A large class of examples is given by cotangent bundles  $P = T^*M$  of manifolds M, with  $\omega = d\theta$  where  $\theta$  is the canonical one-form on M.

On a symplectic manifold the non-degeneracy condition allows one to associate to a function f a vector field  $X_f$  by

$$df = \omega(X_f, \cdot) = i_{X_f}\omega$$

This is a "symplectic gradient", an analog of the usual gradient for a Riemannian manifold, which associates a vector to field to f by using the metric to identify the one-form df with a vector field. Not all vector fields are of the form  $X_f$ . Those that are are called "Hamiltonian vector fields".

The Poisson bracket can then be defined by

$$\{f_1, f_2\} = \omega(X_{f_1}, X_{f_2})$$

Writing out explicitly the conditon that the three form  $d\omega = 0$ , one gets the Jacobi identity for the Poisson bracket, and thus a Lie algebra structure on the functions on P. The map

$$f \to X_f$$

is a Lie algebra homomorphism from this Lie algebra of functions to the Lie algebra of vector fields on P.

These are infinite dimensional Lie algebras, which one can locally exponentiate to get a group law (actually a "pseudogroup"). Such a group action preserves  $\omega$  since the Lie derivative satisfies

$$L_{X_f}\omega = (di_{X_f} + i_{X_f}d)\omega = di_{X_f}\omega = d\omega(X_f, \cdot) = ddf = 0$$

$$(2.1)$$

This (pseudo)-group preserving  $\omega$  is a sub (pseudo)-group of the group of diffeomorphisms of P (the "symplectomorphisms" to mathematicians, "canonical transformations" to physicists).

By 2.1, for any vector field X preserving  $\omega$  one has  $di_X \omega = 0$ . When  $H^1(M) = 0$  the vector field X will be a Hamiltonian vector field  $X_f$  for a function f determined by  $i_X \omega = df$ . This function f is determined only up to a constant (for P connected).

In the physicist's language the Hamiltonian function h "generates" an action of the Lie group  $\mathbf{R}$  on P given by the vector field  $X_h$ . This Lie group  $\mathbf{R}$  is the group of time translations acting on the physical system. Whenever one has an action of a Lie group G on P that preserves  $\omega$ , differentiating this gives a Hamiltonian vector field  $X_L$  for each  $L \in \mathfrak{g}$ , the Lie algebra of G. Thus, when  $H^1(M) = 0$ , for each  $L \in \mathfrak{g}$  one can find (ambiguous up to a constant) a function  $f_L$  that generates the action infinitesimally given by the action of L. It turns out that when  $H^2(\mathfrak{g}) = 0$  (Lie algebra cohomology), the constants can be chosen so that the map  $L \to f_L$  is a Lie algebra isomorphism between  $\mathfrak{g}$  and a sub-Lie algebra of the Lie algebra of functions on P. This map is known as the "moment map".

When a function f on P Poisson-commutes with the Hamiltonian ( $\{f, h\} = 0$ ), then  $\frac{df}{dt} = 0$  and the function f is a constant along the physical trajectories

of time evolution generated by the Hamiltonian h. In such a case f is said to be a "conserved quantity". When we have an action of a Lie group G on Ppreserving  $\omega$  that commutes with the action of the group  $\mathbf{R}$  of time translations, the functions  $f_L$  for each  $L \in \mathfrak{g}$  will be conserved quantities. This is how conservation laws corresponding to symmetries come about in the Hamiltonian formalism.

Some important examples:

- For a particle in 3 dimensions,  $P = \mathbf{R}^6$  with the usual Poisson bracket. There is a Hamiltonian action of  $\mathbf{R}^3$  by translation in the *q* coordinates, generated by the *p* coordinates. When the hamiltonian *h* is independent of a coordinate  $q_j$ , the corresponding  $p_j$  is a conserved quantity: the momentum in the *j* direction.
- In the same case there is a Hamiltonian action of SO(3), by simultaneous rotation of the **q** and **p**. The functions that generate rotations about the axes are

$$l_1 = q_2 p_3 - p_2 q_3, \quad l_2 = q_3 p_1 - p_3 q_1, \quad l_3 = q_1 p_2 - p_1 q_2$$

These are the components of the angular momentum. When the Hamiltonian is invariant under rotations about the *j*-axis,  $l_j$  is a conserved quantity.

For any LIe algebra  $\mathfrak{g}$ , one can take  $P = \mathfrak{g}^*$ . Lie algebra elements  $X, Y \in \mathfrak{g}$  are linear functions on P. On these linear functions the Lie bracket is a Poisson bracket

$$\{X,Y\} = [X,Y]$$

and this can be extended using the derivation property to a Poisson bracket on  $S^*(\mathfrak{g})$ , the polynomials on  $\mathfrak{g}^* = P$ . P is not a symplectic manifold, since this construction does not give a non-degenerate two-form (instead, it's a "Poisson manifold). A Lie group G acts on its LIe algebra  $\mathfrak{g}$  by the adjoint action, and there is a corresponding co-adjoint action on  $\mathfrak{g}^*$ . On the orbits of the co-adjoint action, one does have a non-degenerate symplectic form, and these orbits are symplectic manifolds. The example of  $S^2$  mentioned above is the case of G = SO(3), where the co-adjoint orbits are spheres in  $\mathbb{R}^3 = \mathfrak{so}(3)^*$ .

### 2.2 Lagrangian mechanics

In the Lagrangian formalism, instead of a phase space  $P = \mathbf{R}^{2n}$  of positions  $q_j$  and momenta  $p_j$ , one considers just the position (or configuration) space  $M = \mathbf{R}^n$ . Instead of a Hamiltonian function h on P, one has a functional  $S[\gamma]$  of parametrized paths  $\gamma$  in M called the "action". The action is defined by integrating a function of position and velocity called the Lagrangian.

**Definition** (Action). The action S for a path  $\gamma$  is

$$S[\gamma] = \int_{t_1}^{t_2} L(\mathbf{q}(t), \dot{\mathbf{q}}(t)) dt$$

Here the path is parametrized by  $t \in [t_1, t_2]$  and the Lagrangian L is a function of t that depends on the position at t and its t-derivative. More generally, one can formulate this for configuration space a manifold M, with L(t) depending on the velocity vector, which takes values in the tangent space of M.

The fundamental principle of classical mechanics in the Lagrangian formalism is that classical trajectories are given by critical points of the action functional.

**Definition** (Critical point for S). A path  $\gamma$  is a critical point of the functional  $S[\gamma]$  if

$$\delta S(\gamma) \equiv \frac{d}{ds} S(\gamma_s)_{|s=0} = 0$$

where

$$\gamma_s: [t_1, t_2] \to \mathbf{R}^n$$

is a smooth family of paths parametrized by an interval  $s \in (-\epsilon, \epsilon)$ , with  $\gamma_0 = \gamma$ .

Critical points will be given by solutions to the Euler-Lagrange equations, which will be the equations of motion for the system:

Theorem (Euler-Lagrange equations). One has

$$\delta S[\gamma] = 0$$

for all variations of  $\gamma$  with endpoints  $\gamma(t_1)$  and  $\gamma(t_2)$  fixed if

$$\frac{\partial L}{\partial q_j}(\mathbf{q}(t), \dot{\mathbf{q}}(t)) - \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_j}(\mathbf{q}(t), \dot{\mathbf{q}}(t)) \right) = 0$$

for  $j = 1, \dots, d$ . These are called the Euler-Lagrange equations.

*Proof.* Ignoring analytical details, the Euler-Lagrange equations follow from the following calculations, which we'll just do for n = 1, with the generalization to higher d straightforward. We are calculating the first-order change in S due to an infinitesimal change  $\delta \gamma = (\delta q(t), \delta \dot{q}(t))$ 

$$\begin{split} \delta S[\gamma] &= \int_{t_1}^{t_2} \delta L(q(t), \dot{q}(t)) dt \\ &= \int_{t_1}^{t_2} \left( \frac{\partial L}{\partial q}(q(t), \dot{q}(t)) \delta q(t) + \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}}(q(t), \dot{q}(t)) \delta \dot{q}(t) \right) dt \end{split}$$

But

$$\delta \dot{q}(t) = \frac{d}{dt} \delta q(t)$$

and, using integration by parts

$$\frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} \delta \dot{q}(t) = \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} \delta q \right) - \left( \frac{d}{dt} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} \right) \delta q$$

 $\mathbf{SO}$ 

$$\delta S[\gamma] = \int_{t_1}^{t_2} \left( \left( \frac{\partial L}{\partial q} - \frac{d}{dt} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} \right) \delta q - \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} \delta q \right) \right) dt$$
$$= \int_{t_1}^{t_2} \left( \frac{\partial L}{\partial q} - \frac{d}{dt} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} \right) \delta q dt - \left( \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} \delta q \right) (t_2) + \left( \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} \delta q \right) (t_1)$$
(2.2)

If we keep the endpoints fixed so  $\delta q(t_1) = \delta q(t_2) = 0$ , then for solutions to

$$\frac{\partial L}{\partial q}(q(t),\dot{q}(t)) - \frac{d}{dt}\left(\frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}}(q(t),\dot{q}(t))\right) = 0$$

the integral will be zero for arbitrary variations  $\delta q$ .

As an example, a particle moving in a potential  $V(\mathbf{q})$  will be described by a Lagrangian

$$L(\mathbf{q}, \dot{\mathbf{q}}) = \frac{1}{2}m|\dot{\mathbf{q}}|^2 - V(\mathbf{q})$$

for which the Euler-Lagrange equations will be Newton's second law:

$$-\frac{\partial V}{\partial q_j} = \frac{d}{dt}(m\dot{q}_j) = m\ddot{q}_j$$

Given a Lagrangian classical mechanical system, one would like to be able to find a corresponding Hamiltonian system that will give the same equations of motion. To do this, we proceed by defining for each  $q_j$  a corresponding momentum coordinate  $p_j$  by

$$p_j = \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_j}$$

Then, instead of working with trajectories characterized at time t by

$$(\mathbf{q}(t), \dot{\mathbf{q}}(t)) \in \mathbf{R}^{2n}$$

we would like to instead use

$$(\mathbf{q}(t), \mathbf{p}(t)) \in \mathbf{R}^{2n}$$

where  $p_j = \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_j}$  and identify this  $\mathbf{R}^{2n}$  (for example at t = 0) as the phase space of the conventional Hamiltonian formalism.

The transformation

$$(q_j, \dot{q}_k) \to \left(q_j, p_k = \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_k}\right)$$

between position-velocity and phase space (in greater generality TM and  $T^*M$ ) is known as the Legendre transform, and in good cases (for instance when L is quadratic in all the velocities) it is an isomorphism. In general though, this is not an isomorphism, with the Legendre transform often taking position-velocity

space to a lower dimensional subspace of phase space. Such cases are not unusual and require a much more complicated formalism, even as classical mechanical systems (this subject is known as "constrained Hamiltonian dynamics").

Besides a phase space, for a Hamiltonian system one needs a Hamiltonian function. Choosing

$$h = \sum_{j=1}^{a} p_j \dot{q}_j - L(\mathbf{q}, \dot{\mathbf{q}})$$

will work, provided the relation

$$p_j = \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_j}$$

can be used to solve for the velocities  $\dot{q}_j$  and express them in terms of the momentum variables. In that case, computing the differential of h one finds (for d = 1, the generalization to higher d is straightforward)

$$\begin{split} dh = p d\dot{q} + \dot{q} dp - \frac{\partial L}{\partial q} dq - \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} d\dot{q} \\ = \dot{q} dp - \frac{\partial L}{\partial q} dq \end{split}$$

So one has

$$\frac{\partial h}{\partial p} = \dot{q}, \quad \frac{\partial h}{\partial q} = -\frac{\partial L}{\partial q}$$

but these are precisely Hamilton's equations since the Euler-Lagrange equations imply

$$\frac{\partial L}{\partial q} = \frac{d}{dt} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}} = \dot{p}$$

While the Legendre transform method given above works in some situations, more generally and more abstractly, one can pass from the Lagrangian to the Hamiltonian formalism by taking as phase space the space of solutions of the Euler-Lagrange equations. This is sometimes called the "covariant phase space", and it can often concretely be realized by fixing a time t = 0 and parametrizing solutions by their initial conditions. Only for a special class of Lagrangians though will one get a non-degenerate Poisson bracket on a linear phase space and recover the usual properties of the standard Hamiltonian formalism. For greater generality one needs a more complicated formalism to recover the desired features of the Hamiltonian formalism.

# 2.2.1 Noether's theorem and symmetries in the Lagrangian formalism

The derivation of the Euler-Lagrange equations given above can also be used to study the implications of Lie group symmetries of a Lagrangian system. When a Lie group G acts on the space of paths, preserving the action S, it will take

classical trajectories to classical trajectories, so we have a Lie group action on the space of solutions to the equations of motion (the Euler-Lagrange equations). On this space of solutions, we have, from equation 2.2 (generalized to multiple coordinate variables),

$$\delta S[\gamma] = \left(\sum_{j=1}^{d} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_j} \delta q_j(X)\right) (t_1) - \left(\sum_{j=1}^{d} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_j} \delta q_j(X)\right) (t_2)$$

where now  $\delta q_j(X)$  is the infinitesimal change in a classical trajectory coming from the infinitesimal group action by an element X in the Lie algebra of G. From invariance of the action S under G we must have  $\delta S=0$ , so

$$\left(\sum_{j=1}^{d} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_j} \delta q_j(X)\right)(t_2) = \left(\sum_{j=1}^{d} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_j} \delta q_j(X)\right)(t_1)$$

This is an example of a result known as "Noether's theorem". In this context it says that given a Lie group action on a Lagrangian system that leaves the action invariant, for each element X of the Lie algebra we will have a conserved quantity

$$\sum_{j=1}^{d} \frac{\partial L}{\partial \dot{q}_j} \delta q_j(X)$$

which is independent of time along the trajectory.

When the Lagrangian L is translation invariant (depends on  $\dot{q}$ , not q), one recovers by the Noether method the definition of momentum and its conservation law. When L is rotation invariant, one gets angular momentum and its conservation.

The Lagrangian formalism has the advantage that the dynamics depends only on the choice of action functional on the space of possible trajectories, and it can be straightforwardly generalized to theories where the configuration space is an infinite dimensional space of classical fields. Unlike the usual Hamiltonian formalism for such theories, the Lagrangian formalism allows one to treat space and time symmetrically. For relativistic field theories, this allows one to exploit the full set of space-time symmetries, which can mix space and time directions. In such theories, Noether's theorem provides a powerful tool for finding the conserved quantities corresponding to symmetries of the system that are due to invariance of the action under some group of transformations.

On the other hand, in the Lagrangian formalism, since Noether's theorem only considers group actions on configuration space, it does not cover the case of Hamiltonian group actions that mix position and momentum coordinates, something that occurs most notably in the case of the harmonic oscillator.

## Chapter 3

# Introduction to Quantization

In this chapter we'll begin our discussion of quantum theory with some basic examples covered in all physics textbooks, followed by some generalities about the role of quantization in representation theory. The three examples here incorporate three important aspects of the quantum field theories we plan to study later in the course.

### **3.1** Canonical quantization: some examples

What physicists call "canonical quantization" can be understood in terms of the unique non-trivial representation of the Heisenberg group and Lie algebra, which will be described in detail in the next chapter. In this one, we'll motivate the later representation theory with a standard description of the basic examples of quantum systems.

The space of possible states for a quantum system is a complex vector space  $\mathcal{H}$  (generally infinite-dimensional) with Hermitian inner product. For one degree of freedom this space can be taken to be the space of wavefunctions (complex-valued functions  $\psi(q)$  of a position variable q) in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$ . This version of the state space is called the Schrödinger representation and acting on it are powers of the self-adjoint operators

$$Q = q, \quad P = -i\hbar \frac{d}{dq}$$

which satisfy the Heisenberg commutation relations

$$[Q,P] = i\hbar \mathbf{1}$$

Here  $\hbar$  is a constant which depends on one's choice of units, so later we will often use units in which  $\hbar = 1$ .

The dynamics of the system is determined by specification of an operator (defined in terms of the Q, P operators), the Hamiltonian H. This operator generates translations in time, with wavefunctions evolving in time according to the Schrödinger equation

$$i\hbar\frac{d}{dt}\psi = H\psi$$

The connection between this formalism and what ones observes, measures and often interprets in a classical picture of the world is given by two principles:

- Self-adjoint operators like Q and P correspond to observable quantities, with eigenfunctions of such an operator states with a well-defined measurable value of the observable quantity, given by the eigenvalue.
- If one tries to measure the value of an observable quantity when the state is not an eigenfunction, the result will be one of the eigenvalues, with probability given by the norm-squared of the inner product between the (normalized) state and eigenfunction with that eigenvalue (this is called the "Born rule").

For a single quantum particle moving in one dimension, subject to a potential V(q), the Hamiltonian is

$$H = \frac{1}{2m}P^2 + V(Q) = -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m}\frac{d^2}{dq^2} + V(q)$$

One would like to find the eigenfunctions and eigenvalues of this operator, i.e. find  $E, \psi_E(q)$  such that

$$\left(-\frac{\hbar^2}{2m}\frac{d^2}{dq^2} + V(q)\right)\psi_E(q) = E\psi_E(q)$$

and then expand wavefunctions at an initial time t = 0 in terms of the energy eigenfunctions  $\psi_E(q)$ . The Schrödinger equation implies that these evolve in time as

$$\psi_E(q)e^{-\frac{i}{\hbar}Et}$$

For much more detail about the following basic examples, see any physics textbook on quantum mechanics, or [31].

#### 3.1.1 The free particle

The case of the free particle is the case V(q) = 0. Using Fourier analysis, one finds that the energy eigenvalues and eigenfunctions are parametrized by  $p \in \mathbf{R}$  and are given by

$$E_p = \frac{p^2}{2m}, \ \psi_{E_p}(q) = e^{i\frac{p}{\hbar}q}$$

The spectrum of the Hamiltonian is continuous, all non-negative values in **R**.

The eigenfunctions of H are also eigenfunctions of the momentum operator P with eigenvalue p. P commutes with H, so if one prepares a state at time 0

with wavefunction  $\psi_{E_p}(q)$  and measures its momentum at any later time, one will always get the value p (the momentum is a conserved quantity). Just as H is the generator of time-translations on states, P is the generator of spatial translations.

The eigenfunctions of the operator Q are delta-functions  $\delta(q - q')$ , with eigenvalue  $q' \in \mathbf{R}$ . Unlike the case for momentum P, one has  $[Q, H] \neq 0$  and these are not energy eigenfunctions. If one prepares a state at time 0 with wavefunction  $\delta(q - q')$ , so localized at q = q', it will immediately evolve into a linear combination of states with all possible eigenvalues of Q. Measurement of position at later times t may give all possible different values.

Note that the eigenfunctions of Q and P are not functions in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$  and in addition, the operators Q and P don't preserve  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$  (multiplying or differentiating by q can take a function that is square-integrable to one that isn't). To deal with these problems simultaneously, one can define the Schwartz space  $S(\mathbf{R})$  of functions such that the function and its derivatives fall off faster than any power at  $\pm \infty$ . The dual space  $S'(\mathbf{R})$  of continuous linear functionals on  $S(\mathbf{R})$  is called the space of tempered distributions, and includes the eigenfunctions of Q and P. One has the sequence of dense inclusions

$$S(\mathbf{R}) \subset L^2(\mathbf{R}) \subset \mathcal{S}'(\mathbf{R})$$

The Fourier transform takes each term in this sequence to itself.

A problem here is that elements of  $\mathcal{S}'(\mathbf{R})$  like the eigenfunctions of Q and P are not in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$ . They do not have well-defined norms, so will not be vectors in a unitary representation and the Born rule can't be used for them. However, they are linear functionals on  $S(\mathbf{R})$  and one can use this to play the role of their inner products with elements of  $S(\mathbf{R})$ .

To get a well-defined formalism one has two options:

- Work with states  $\psi \in L^2(\mathbf{R})$ , taking great care with domains and ranges of operators like P, Q and H that are applied to states. In this case, eigenfunctions of these operators are not in the state space.
- Work with the space  $S'(\mathbf{R})$  and distributional states, but be careful to properly pair these only with physical states in  $\mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R})$  (sometimes called "wavepackets").

#### 3.1.2 The harmonic oscillator

The quantum harmonic oscillator is the case of a particle moving in a quadratic potential  $V(q) = \frac{1}{2}m\omega^2 q^2$ 

$$H = \frac{1}{2m}P^2 + \frac{1}{2}m\omega^2 Q^2$$

The energy eigenvalues and eigenfunctions are given by

$$E_n = \hbar\omega(n+\frac{1}{2}), \quad \psi_n(q) = H_n\left(\sqrt{\frac{m\omega}{\hbar}q}\right)e^{-\frac{m\omega}{2\hbar}q^2}$$

where n = 0, 1, 2, ... and  $H_n(q)$  are Hermite polynomials. In this case the spectrum of the operator H is discrete, energy eigenfunctions are in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$ , and arbitrary t = 0 wavefunctions in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$  can be written as linear combinations of the  $\psi_{E_n}(q)$ .

The easiest way to get these results is to work not with Q and P, but with complex linear combinations of these. For simplicity, rescaling so that  $\hbar = m = \omega = 1$ , one can choose

$$a = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(Q + iP) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(q + \frac{d}{dq}), \quad a^{\dagger} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(Q - iP) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(q - \frac{d}{dq})$$

 $a, a^{\dagger}$  are each others adjoints and satisfy the commutation relation

$$[a, a^{\dagger}] = \mathbf{1}$$

The Hamiltonian is

$$H = \frac{1}{2}(Q^2 + P^2) = \frac{1}{2}(a^{\dagger}a + aa^{\dagger}) = a^{\dagger}a + \frac{1}{2}$$

One can easily see (using  $[H, a^{\dagger}] = a^{\dagger}$  and [H, a] = -a) that  $a^{\dagger}$  increases the eigenvalue of H by 1, a reduces it by 1. To have a spectrum bounded below, one needs a non-zero state  $\psi_0(q)$  satisfying

$$a\psi_0(q) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(q + \frac{d}{dq})\psi_0(q) = 0$$

This state will have energy  $\frac{1}{2}$  and by given by

$$\psi_0(q) = e^{-\frac{1}{2}q^2}$$

The other energy eigenstates will have energy  $n + \frac{1}{2}$  for  $n = 1, 2, \cdots$  and can be found explicitly by applying the operator  $a^{\dagger}$  *n*-times to  $\psi_0(q)$ , so evaluating

$$(q - \frac{d}{dq})^n e^{-\frac{1}{2}q^2}$$

Note that for the harmonic oscillator, V(q) is not translation invariant, and one has  $[P, H] \neq 0$  as well as  $[Q, H] \neq 0$  so neither position nor momentum are conserved quantities.

For more general potentials one can have both discrete (with eigenfunctions in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$ ) and continuous (with eigenfunctions not in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$ ) components of the spectrum. The physical interpretation will involve both "bound states" which correspond to particles localized in some regions of  $\mathbf{R}$  and "scattering states" which correspond to particles with possible positions extending to  $+\infty$  or  $-\infty$ .

## **3.2** The spin $\frac{1}{2}$ quantum system

A very simple and very important example of a quantum system is the spin  $\frac{1}{2}$  system that describes a highly non-classical degree of freedom shared by all

matter particles. Unlike the previous two examples, this one is not in any sense a quantization of a classical Hamiltonian system with phase space  $\mathbf{R}^{2n}$ . This system is characterized by

- The state space is  $\mathcal{H} = \mathbf{C}^2$ .
- The operators corresponding to observables (including the Hamiltonian operator H) are the self-adjoint operators on  $\mathbb{C}^2$ , so (real) linear combinations of

$$\mathbf{1}, \ \ \sigma_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \ \ \sigma_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -i \\ i & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \ \ \sigma_3 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$$

Here the  $\sigma_j$  are the Pauli matrices, the physicist's convention for a basis of self-adjoint two by two matrices.

This same system describes any quantum system with  $\mathbb{C}^2$ , for which H can be an arbitrary self-adjoint two by two matrix. The solution to the Schrödinger equation will be given by

$$e^{-iHt}\psi(0)$$

where  $\psi(0) \in \mathbf{C}^2$  is the state at t = 0. Here  $e^{-iHt}$  will be a unitary matrix, so an element of the group U(2).

This system is described as "spin  $\frac{1}{2}$ " since it is the spinor representation of the group Spin(3) = SU(2), the double cover of the rotation group SO(3). It thus describes a degree of freedom which transforms non-trivially under rotations of space. If one normalizes the observable operators by

$$S_j = \frac{1}{2}\sigma_j$$

then  $e^{i\theta S_j}$  will give the behavior of a state under a rotation by an angle  $\theta$  about the *j*-axis. These are called "spin" operators and have eigenvalues  $\pm \frac{1}{2}$ , which by the principles connecting quantum theory to observation should describe the two possible values one can observe for the spin observable. The subtleties of this become apparent once one notes that the different  $S_j$  don't commute so can't be simultaneously diagonalized. Unlike in classical mechanics where a system at a given time has three well-defined components of its angular momentum, here something very different is going on.

There are two different ways to think of this system as the "quantization" of something:

- Take phase space to be  $P = S^2$ , a co-adjoint orbit in  $\mathbf{R}^3 = \mathfrak{su}(2)^*$ , and develop a theory of how to "quantize" such symplectic manifolds.
- Take phase space to be **R**<sup>3</sup> but using "anti-commuting" variables, a subject we will develop later.

In either case, it is as a quantum system that there is a very simple description, with any possible classical analog something much more complicated to describe.

### **3.3** Quantization and representation theory

#### 3.3.1 Dirac quantization as a Lie algebra representation

In the previous chapter we saw that the polynomial functions on phase space  $P = \mathbf{R}^{2n}$  form a Lie algebra, with Lie bracket the Poisson bracket. Very soon after Heisenberg's 1925 development of quantum theory based upon non-commuting operators corresponding to position and momentum, Dirac proposed a general rule for such operators. If  $O_f$  is the quantum operator corresponding to the classical phase space function f, then he proposed that

$$O_{\{f,g\}} = -\frac{i}{\hbar}[O_f, O_g] \tag{3.1}$$

generalizing the Heisenberg commutation relations for operators  $Q_j, P_j$  corresponding to coordinates  $q_j, p_j$ . In the language of Lie algebras and representations, this proposal was that quantization is a unitary representation on the state space  $\mathcal{H}$  of the infinite dimensional Lie algebra of functions on phase space. The passage from classical to quantum is nothing but the passage from a Lie algebra to one of its representations.

Recall that a complex representation  $\pi'$  of a Lie algebra L is a Lie algebra homomorphism

$$\pi': L \to End(V)$$

Here End(V) is the Lie algebra of linear operators on V, with Lie bracket the commutator. The Lie algebra homomorphism condition is that  $\pi'$  preserves Lie brackets:

$$\pi'([X,Y]) = [\pi'(X),\pi'(Y)]$$

Such a representation will be unitary when there is a Hermitian form on V and the  $\pi'(X)$  are skew-adjoint operators  $(\pi'(X)^{\dagger} = -\pi'(X))$ .

Such a Lie algebra representation may come from a representation  $\pi$  of a group G with Lie algebra L = Lie(G) (in which case it is called "integrable"). Then  $\pi$  is a group homomorphism

$$\pi: G \to GL(V)$$

from the group G to the group of invertible linear operators on V. G and GL(V) are smooth manifolds, and  $\pi'$  will be the derivative of  $\pi$ , evaluated at the identity. When the representation is unitary  $\pi$  takes values in the group U(V) of unitary transformations.

The Dirac quantization rule (setting  $\hbar = 1$ ) says that

$$f \to \pi'(f) = -i\hbar O_{f}$$

is a Lie algebra homomorphism, since the homomorphism property is

$$\pi'(\{f,g\}) = -i\hbar O_{\{f,g\}} = [\pi'(f), \pi'(g)] = [-i\hbar O_f, -i\hbar O_g] = -\hbar^2 [O_f, O_g]$$

which is Dirac's 3.1. Note that the operators  $O_f$  favored by physicists are selfadjoint (so have real eigenvalues), while the  $\pi'(f) = -i\hbar O_f$  are skew-adjoint.

It turns out that Dirac's proposal is flawed. In the next chapter we will see that there is a representation  $\pi'$  which has the right properties for polynomials of degree up to two (so, for n = 1, the Lie subalgebra with basis  $1, q, p, q^2, p^2, qp$ ), but cannot be extended consistently to higher order polynomials. This is a theorem (called the Groenewold-van Hove no-go theorem) and well-known to physicists in the form of the existence of "operator-ordering ambiguities" occurring when one tries to implement Dirac's proposal.

### 3.3.2 Some generalities about quantization and representation theory

We will study in the next chapter "canonical quantization" which is the general case of a representation of the Lie algebra of polynomials of degree up to two on  $\mathbb{R}^{2n}$ . More generally, if one starts with a general classical Hamiltonian system with P a general symplectic manifold, one will still have a Poisson bracket and can ask for a notion of quantization that gives a state space with operators satisfying commutation relations corresponding to the Poisson bracket relations. The subject of "geometric quantization" attempts to provide such generalization, but so far has shown limited applicability, especially in providing the full range of observable operators one would like. Mathematicians studying the representation theory of Lie groups and Lie algebras draw inspiration from quantum systems studied by physicists. These often are "quantizations" of some classic system, potentially providing an example of a new way to construct representations.

We discussed earlier co-adjoint orbits in  $P = \mathfrak{g}^*$ . Here the question of how to get operators has a compelling answer: the algebra of operators in the quantization of  $\mathfrak{g}^*$  should be the universal enveloping algebra  $U(\mathfrak{g})$ . The problem is that one has to represent these operators on a complex vector space V, and this is precisely the general problem of representation theory for Lie algebras, that of how to classify and construct all possible representations. It is a well-known principle that a fruitful way to approach the problem is the "orbit method". Here one uses the decomposition of  $\mathfrak{g}^*$  into co-adjoint orbits and tries to associate to each co-adjoint orbit an irreducible representation, by "quantizing" the classical Hamiltonians system with phase space that orbit. This returns one to the problem of quantizing phase spaces P that are not linear, but for examples that have a great deal of extra structure governed by the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{g}$ . The subject of "geometric quantization" has been motivated by efforts to solve this problem of quantizing co-adjoint orbits.

In what follows we will stick to a special case of this general problem, using the Lie algebra of Heisenberg group, for which the co-adjoint orbits are exactly the linear phase spaces  $P = \mathbf{R}^{2n}$ .

For a summary of the orbit philosophy and how it mostly (but not always) leads to constructions of irreducible representations, see [13].

## Chapter 4

# Canonical quantization: bosons

## 4.1 The Heisenberg group and its representations

Quantum mechanics as we know it was born in 1925 in a series of conceptual breakthroughs which began with Heisenberg's creation of a theory involving noncommuting quantities, soon reformulated (by Max Born) in terms of position and momentum operators Q and P satisfying the commutation relations

$$[Q, P] = i\hbar \mathbf{1}$$

(known as the Heisenberg commutation relations). We are for now considering just one degree of freedom. The constant  $\hbar$  depends on units used to measure position and momentum. We will choose units such that  $\hbar = 1$ . The mathematician Hermann Weyl soon recognized these relations as those of a unitary representation of a Lie algebra now known as the Heisenberg Lie algebra, and described the corresponding Heisenberg group.

Late in 1925, Schrödinger formulated a seemingly different version of quantum mechanics, in terms of wave-functions satisfying a differential equation. What Schrödinger had found was a construction of a representation of the Heisenberg Lie algebra on the vector space of functions  $\psi(q)$  of a position variable q, with Q the multiplication by q operator and P the differential operator

$$P = -i\frac{d}{dq}$$

We'll begin with the Lie algebra corresponding to the Heisenberg commutation relations, then find the group with this Lie algebra and show that Schrödinger's wave-functions give an irreducible unitary representation of the Lie algebra and group. It turns out that any irreducible unitary representation of the Heisenberg group is essentially equivalent to this one (Stone-von Neumann theorem), but the family of different ways of constructing these representations carries an intricate structure.

#### 4.1.1 The Heisenberg Lie algebra and Lie group

The Lie algebra spanned by 1, q, p will be the three-dimensional Lie algebra with a basis X, Y, Z and Lie bracket relations

$$[X,Z]=[Y,Z]=0, \hspace{1em} [X,Y]=Z$$

This Lie algebra can be identified with the Lie algebra of three by three strictly upper-triangular matrices by

$$X = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad Y = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad Z = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

It is called the Heisenberg Lie algebra by mathematicians, and we'll use the notation  $\mathfrak{h}_3$ .

A unitary representation (which we'll call  $\pi'$ ) will be given by three skewadjoint operator  $\pi'(X), \pi'(Y), \pi'(Z)$  satisfying

$$[\pi'(X), \pi'(Y)] = \pi'(Z), \quad [\pi'(X), \pi'(Z)] = 0, \quad [\pi'(Y), \pi'(Z)] = 0$$

These become the Heisenberg commutation relations if we identify

$$\pi'(X) = -iQ, \ \pi'(Y) = -iP, \ \pi'(Z) = -i\mathbf{1}$$

Note that factors of i appear because physicists like to work with self-adjoint operators (since their eigenvalues are real), but for unitary representations the Lie algebra representation operators are skew-adjoint.

In terms of matrices, exponentiating elements of  $\mathfrak{h}_3$  as in

$$exp\begin{pmatrix} 0 & x & z \\ 0 & 0 & y \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & x & z + \frac{1}{2}xy \\ 0 & 1 & y \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

gives the elements of the Heisenberg group  $H_3$  (physicists often call this the "Weyl group", but this means something different to mathematicians). This is the group of upper triangular matrices with 1s on the diagonal. Using x, y, z as "exponential" coordinates on the group,  $H_3$  is the space  $\mathbb{R}^3$  with multiplication law

$$(x, y, z)(x', y', z') = (x + x', y + y', z + z' + \frac{1}{2}(xy' - x'y))$$

For computations with the Heisenberg group it is often convenient to use the Baker-Campbell-Hausdorf formula, which simplifies greatly in this case since all Lie brackets except [X, Y] = Z vanish. As a result, for  $A, B \in \mathfrak{h}_3$  one has

$$e^A e^B = e^{A+B+\frac{1}{2}[A,B]}$$

The group  $H_3$  is a central extension

$$0 \rightarrow (\mathbf{R}, +) \rightarrow H_3 \rightarrow (\mathbf{R}^2, +) \rightarrow 0$$

of the additive group of  $\mathbf{R}^2$  by the additive group of  $\mathbf{R}$  (which is the center of the group).

A slightly different version of the Heisenberg goup (which we'll call  $H_{3,red}$ ) that is sometimes used takes a quotient by **Z** and replaces the central **R** with a central U(1), so is a central extension

$$0 \to U(1) \to H_{3,red} \to (\mathbf{R}^2, +) \to 0$$

Elements are labeled by (x, y, u) where x and y are in **R** and  $u \in U(1)$ , and the group law is

$$(x, y, u)(x', y', u') = (x + x', y + y', uu'e^{i\frac{1}{2}(xy' - x'y)})$$

#### 4.1.2 The Schrödinger representation

The Schrödinger representation  $\pi_S$  is a representation on a vector space  $\mathcal{H}$  of complex valued functions  $\psi(q)$  on  $\mathbf{R}$ , with derivative the Lie algebra representation

$$\pi'_{S}(X) = -iQ = -iq, \ \pi'_{S}(Y) = -iP = -\frac{d}{dq}, \ \pi'_{S}(Z) = -i1$$

Exponentiating these operators gives unitary operators that generate  $\pi_S$ 

$$\pi_S(x) = e^{-ixq}, \ \pi_S(y) = e^{-y\frac{d}{dq}}, \ \pi_S(z) = e^{-iz}\mathbf{1}$$
(4.1)

Note that  $\pi_S(y)$  acts on the representation space by translation

$$\pi_S(y)\psi(q) = \psi(q-y)$$

**Definition** (Schrödinger representation). The Schrödinger representation of the Heisenberg group H is given by

$$\pi_S(x, y, z)\psi(q) = e^{-iz}e^{i\frac{1}{2}xy}e^{-ixq}\psi(q-y)$$
(4.2)

for  $(x, y, z) \in H$ .

One can easily check that this is a representation, since it satisfies the homomorphism property

$$\pi_S(x, y, z)\pi_S(x', y', z') = \pi_S(x + x', y + y', z + z' + \frac{1}{2}(xy' - x'y))$$

Taking as representation space  $\mathcal{H} = L^2(\mathbf{R})$ , for the Lie algebra representation  $\pi'_S$  there will be domain problems (functions on which operators not defined) and range problems (operators take something in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$  to something not in

 $L^{2}(\mathbf{R})$ ). As an alternative, one can take  $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R})$  so that the representation operators are well-defined (but then the dual space is something different, the tempered distributions  $S'(\mathbf{R})$ ). For the group representation, the operators  $\pi_{S}$ are well-defined on  $\mathcal{H} = L^{2}(\mathbf{R})$ . Giving up on a well-defined inner-product and unitarity, one can take  $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{S}'(\mathbf{R})$  and have both a Lie algebra and Lie group representation.

This multiplicity of closely related versions of the representation is a general phenomenon for infinite-dimensional representations of non-compact Lie groups, where one has inequivalent representations on a sequence of dense inclusions of representation spaces, here

$$\mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R}) \subset L^2(\mathbf{R}) \subset \mathcal{S}'(\mathbf{R})$$

#### 4.1.3 The Stone-von Neumann theorem

The remarkable fact about representations of the Heisenberg group is that there is essentially only one representation (once one has specified the constant by which Z acts, but non-zero choices are related by a rescaling). More specifically, any irreducible representation of  $H_3$  will be unitarily equivalent to the Schrödinger representation. One has the following theorem

**Theorem** (Stone-von Neumann). For any irreducible unitary representation  $\pi$ of  $H_3$  (with action of the center  $\pi(0, 0, z) = e^{-iz}$ ) on a Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H}$ , there is a unitary operator  $U : \mathcal{H} \to L^2(\mathbf{R})$  such that

$$U\pi U^{-1} = \pi_S$$

We will not give a proof here, since the analysis is somewhat involved, but what follows should make clear some problems that any proof needs to overcome and motivate the strategy for an actual proof.

Recall that one can define the adjoint pair of operators

$$a = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(Q + iP) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(q + \frac{d}{dq}), \quad a^{\dagger} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(Q - iP) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(q - \frac{d}{dq})$$

and for the harmonic oscillator Hamiltonian the lowest energy eigenspace is the one-dimensional space of solutions in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$  of

$$a\psi_0(q) = 0$$

These are all proportional to

$$\psi_0 = e^{-\frac{1}{2}q^2}$$

The rest of the state space can be generated by repeatedly applying the operator  $a^{\dagger}$  to  $\psi_0$ .

**Exercise.** Use this basis to prove that the Schrödinger representation is irreducible.

For some motivation for why the Stone-von Neumann theorem might be true, for  $\pi'$  one can construct analogs of the  $a, a^{\dagger}$ 

$$b = \frac{1}{2}(i\pi'(X) - \pi'(Y))$$

and its adjoint  $b^{\dagger}$ . These will satisfy  $[b, b^{\dagger}] = 1$  and by the argument given for the harmonic oscillator state space, there should be a state  $|0_b\rangle$  satisfying  $b |0_b\rangle = 0$ , which together with the  $(b^{\dagger})^k |0_b\rangle$  should give an orthonormal basis of the state space in the  $\pi'$  representation. There will be a unitary operator  $U : \mathcal{H} \to L^2(\mathbf{R})$ taking the basis constructing using the  $b, b^{\dagger}$  operators to the standard basis of harmonic oscillator energy eigenstates in the Schrödinger representation. A possible approach to the Stone-von Neumann theorem would be to note that

$$UbU^{-1} = a, \quad Ub^{\dagger}U^{-1} = a^{\dagger}$$

that b has a one-dimensional kernel (irreducibility), and that the rest of the representation is given by repeated applications of  $b^{\dagger}$ . The U would then give the desired unitary equivalence.

Unfortunately, this can't work, since there is no guarantee that vectors in the range of  $b^{\dagger}$  will be in its domain, so one can't generate the representation by repeatedly applying  $b^{\dagger}$  (it is not hard to construct examples of this using wave-functions with specific boundary conditions). It turns out that the Stonevon Neumann theorem is not true for general Lie algebra representations of  $\mathfrak{h}_3$ , only works for Lie algebra representations that integrate to give a group representation. To get a proof that does work, one needs to work not with  $b, b^{\dagger}$ and  $a, a^{\dagger}$ , but with their exponentiated versions. For details, see [10], chapter 14.

An important example of an irreducible representation unitarily equivalent to the Schrödinger representation is given by using the Fourier transform  $\mathcal{F}$ 

$$\psi(q) \to \widetilde{\psi}(p) = (\mathcal{F}\psi)(p) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{\mathbf{R}} e^{-ipq} \psi(q) dq$$

This is a unitary transformation on  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$ , with inverse  $\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}$  given by Fourier inversion

$$\widetilde{\psi}(p) \to (\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}\widetilde{\psi})(q) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{\mathbf{R}} e^{ipq} \widetilde{\psi}(p) dp$$

The Stone-von Neumann theorem applies, with  $U = \widetilde{\mathcal{F}}, \ U^{-1} = \mathcal{F}.$ 

Note that we will generically refer to the essentially unique representation of the Heisenberg using  $\mathcal{H}$  for the representation space and  $\pi$  for the homomorphism from the group to operators on  $\mathcal{H}$ , with  $\pi'$  for the Lie algebra representation. When we want to specify a specific construction, the  $\pi$  may acquire a subscript (e.g.  $\pi_S$  for the Schrödinger construction) and  $\mathcal{H}$  may get further specified (e.g.  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$ ). Terminology in this subject can be a bit confusing, since instead of the usual multiple representations to keep track of, there is only one, but with multiple different constructions.

#### 4.1.4The Bargmann-Fock representation

The Stone-von Neumann theorem also applies to constructions of representations on other versions of Hilbert space. In particular, it is clear from looking at the harmonic oscillator calculations that energy eigenstates can be identified with monomials in a complex variable, with a and  $a^{\dagger}$  decreasing and increasing the degree. To find a construction of the Heisenberg group irreducible representation on  $\mathbf{C}[w]$ , one needs a Hilbert space structure, which one can define as follows:

**Definition** (Fock Space). Fock space  $\mathcal{H}_F$  is the space of entire functions on  $\mathbf{C}$ , with finite norm in the inner product

$$\langle f(w), g(w) \rangle = \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{\mathbf{C}} \overline{f(w)} g(w) e^{-|w|^2}$$

An orthonormal basis of  $\mathcal{H}_F$  is given by appropriately normalized monomials. Since

$$\begin{array}{lll} \langle w^m, w^n \rangle & = & \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{\mathbf{C}} \overline{w}^m w^n e^{-|w|^2} \\ & = & \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\infty (\int_0^{2\pi} e^{i\theta(n-m)} d\theta) r^{n+m} e^{-r^2} r dr \\ & = & n! \delta_{n,m} \end{array}$$

we see that the functions  $\frac{w^n}{\sqrt{n!}}$  are orthonormal. To get a representation of the (complexified) Heisenberg Lie algebra on this space, define

$$a = \frac{d}{dw}, \ a^{\dagger} = w$$

Exercise. Show that these operators are each other's adjoints with respect to the inner product on Fock space.

On the real Heisenberg Lie algebra, this representation exponentiates to a representation of the Heisenberg group. By the Stone-von Neumann theorem it is unitarily equivalent to the Schrödinger representation on  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$ .

To explicitly write the Bargmann-Fock representation of the Heisenberg Lie algebra, one can complexify and work with operators that depend on complex linear combinations of the real basis X, Y, Z. If one does this first in the Schrödinger representation one has

$$\pi'_{S}(iX) = Q, \ \pi'_{S}(iY) = P, \ \pi'_{S}(iZ) = \mathbf{1}$$

and so

$$\pi'_{S}(\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(iX + i(iY))) = a = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(q + \frac{d}{dq})$$

(with at similar formula for  $a^{\dagger}$ ). To get Bargmann-Fock one wants a  $\pi'_{BF}$  that takes the same linear combinations to  $\frac{d}{dw}$  and w, acting on  $\mathcal{H}_F$ . Thus

$$\pi'_{BF}(\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(iX+i(iY)) = a = \frac{d}{dw}, \ \pi'_{BF}(\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(iX-i(iY)) = a^{\dagger} = w, \ \pi'_{BF}(iZ) = \mathbf{1}$$

We won't work this out here, but these operators can be exponentiated to get operators for a Heisenberg Lie group representation. By Stone-von Neumann, there will be a unitary operators

$$U: \mathcal{H}_F \to L^2(\mathbf{R}), \quad U^{-1}: L^2(\mathbf{R}) \to \mathcal{H}_F$$

These operators are quite non-trivial and interesting in analysis, giving unitary isomorphisms between two very different kinds of function spaces. The explicit form for  $U^{-1}$  is often called the Bargmann transform and is given by

$$(U^{-1}\psi)(w) = \left(\frac{1}{\pi}\right)^{\frac{1}{4}} e^{-\frac{1}{2}w^2} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\frac{1}{2}q^2} e^{\sqrt{2}wq} \psi(q) dq$$

The relation between the Schrödinger and Bargmann-Fock operators is given by

$$U\frac{d}{dw}U^{-1} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(q + \frac{d}{dq}), \quad UwU^{-1} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(q - \frac{d}{dq})$$

Note that what we have been calling the Bargmann Fock representation is defined in terms of polynomials on a complex vector space of dimension n. Using the isomorphism between polynomials on a vector space V and the symmetric tensor product  $S^*(V^*)$ , one can instead define this in terms of tensor products (in which case it often is called the "Fock representation." We will later write this out in detail, since it becomes important in quantum field theory, where one deals with the case of V infinite-dimensional.

For more on the Bargmann-Fock representation and the Bargmann transform a good source is Chapter 1, Section 6 of [7].

#### 4.1.5 The Weyl algebra

A closely related algebra to the Heisenberg Lie algebra is the Weyl algebra, which can be defined as the non-commutative algebra of polynomial coefficient differential operators for a complex variable w. The generators of the algebra are

- Multiplication by w.
- Differentiation by  $w: \frac{d}{dw}$

These satisfy the same commutation relations as  $a, a^{\dagger}$ 

$$\left[\frac{d}{dw}, w\right] = 1$$

since

$$\frac{d}{dw}(wf) - w\frac{df}{dw} = f$$

Recall that one can think of representations of a Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{g}$  as modules for the associative algebra  $U(\mathfrak{g})$  (the universal enveloping algebra of  $\mathfrak{g}$ ). It is convenient here also to complexify, and for any Lie algebra we'll use the notation  $U(\mathfrak{g})$  to refer to  $U(\mathfrak{g}) \otimes \mathbf{C} = U(\mathfrak{g} \otimes \mathbf{C})$ . For the Heisenberg Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{h}_3$ ,  $U(\mathfrak{h}_3)$ is given by all complex linear combinations of products of basis elements X, Y, Z, modulo the relations

$$[X, Z] = [Y, Z] = 0, \quad [X, Y] = Z$$

The center of  $U(\mathfrak{h}_3)$  (denoted here  $\mathcal{Z}(\mathfrak{h}_3)$ ) is the commutative algebra  $\mathbb{C}[Z]$ of polynomials in Z. In any irreducible representation  $\pi'$  of a Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{g}$ , by Schur's lemma elements of the center  $\mathcal{Z}(\mathfrak{g})$  act by scalars. This gives a homomorphism

$$\chi_{\pi'}: \mathcal{Z}(\mathfrak{g}) \to \mathbf{C}$$

called the infinitesimal character of the representation. In the case of  $\mathfrak{g} = \mathfrak{h}_3$ , since  $\mathcal{Z}(\mathfrak{h}_3)$  is an algebra of the polynomial functions in one variable, the infinitesimal character is evaluation of the polynomial at some  $c \in \mathbf{C}$ . This c is the scalar given by the action of  $\pi'(Z)$  on the representation space. The Schrödinger representation as we have defined it is an irreducible representation with c = -i.

For general Lie algebra representations of the complexified Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{h}_3 \otimes \mathbf{C}$ , for each  $c \neq 0$  we have the irreducible representation unitarily equivalent to the Schrödinger representation (rescaled from c = -i). These will be unitary for cimaginary.

Z acts by a scalar we'll call  $c_{\pi'}$ . Polynomials in Z also act by a scalar, the evaluation of the polynomial at  $c_{\pi'}$ . The Schrödinger representation as we have defined it is an irreducible representation with  $c_{\pi'_S} = -i$ . Restricting attention to Lie algebra representations for which  $\pi'(Z) = c\mathbf{1}$  for a chosen  $c \in \mathbf{C}$ , these will be modules for the quotient algebra

$$U(\mathfrak{h}_3)/(Z-c)$$

By rescaling X and Y, for  $c \neq 0$ , we get the Weyl algebra, and so an irreducible Heisenberg algebra representation will be a module for the Weyl algebra. Among these modules is the standard one on polynomials on w, which corresponds to the one we have studying, which is integrable to a unitary Heisenberg group representation. But there are many different modules for the Weyl algebra, with the study of these modules the beginning of the subject of D-modules in algebraic geometry.

#### 4.1.6 The Heisenberg group and symplectic geometry

The three-dimensional Heisenberg group that we have been studying has a simple generalization that behaves in much the same way. For any n, define the

2n+1 dimensional Heisenberg Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{h}_{2n+1}$  to be the Lie algebra with basis  $X_j, Y_j, Z$   $(j = 1, 2, \dots, n)$  and all Lie brackets zero except

$$[X_j, Y_k] = \delta_{jk} Z$$

One can easily easily get a corresponding Heisenberg Lie group  $H_{2n+1}$  generalizing the n = 1 case by exponentiating.

Instead of working with a basis like this, one can define this Lie group in a more coordinate-invariant way, starting with any symplectic form on  $M = \mathbb{R}^{2n}$  (note that M corresponds to  $P^*$ , the dual of phase space, since coordinates on phase space are a basis of M).

**Definition** (Symplectic form). A symplectic form  $\Omega$  on a vector space M is a non-degenerate anti-symmetric bilinear form

$$(v_1, v_2) \in M \times M \to \Omega(v_1, v_2) \in \mathbf{R}$$

on M.

This is the same definition as that of an inner product on a vector space V, with "symmetric" replaced by "antisymmetric." For any even-dimensional real vector space M with a symplectic form  $\Omega$ , one can define a Lie algebra structure on  $M \oplus \mathbf{R}$  by taking the Lie bracket to be

$$[(v, z), (v', z')] = (0, \Omega(v, v'))$$

where (v, z) are elements of  $M \oplus \mathbf{R}$ . One gets a corresponding Lie group by taking as group law on  $M \oplus \mathbf{R}$ 

$$(v,z) \cdot (v',z') = (v+v',z+z'+\frac{1}{2}\Omega(v,v'))$$

In the inner product case, by Gram-Schmidt orthonormalization one can always find an orthonormal basis of V, with any other basis related to this one by an element of GL(V). The subgroup of GL(V) preserving the inner product and thus taking orthonormal bases to orthonormal bases is the orthogonal group O(V). In the symplectic case, M has to be even-dimensional (to have a nondegenerate  $\Omega$ ).

**Exercise.** Show that one can always find a "symplectic basis":  $X_j$  and  $Y_j$  for  $j = 1, 2, \dots, n$  satisfying

$$\Omega(X_j, X_k) = \Omega(Y_j, Y_k) = 0, \quad \Omega(X_j, Y_k) = \delta_{jk}$$

and that in this basis one recovers the earlier definition of the Heisenberg Lie algebra and Lie group of dimension 2n + 1.

The subgroup of GL(M) preserving  $\Omega$  and taking symplectic bases to symplectic bases is by definition the symplectic group Sp(M). Choosing a basis, this group will be a matrix group that can be denoted  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ . Note that this

is different than the group often written as Sp(n), the group of n by n quaternionic matrices preserving the standard hermitian form on  $\mathbf{H}^n$ . The groups Sp(n) and  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  are different real forms of the group  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{C})$  of linear transformations preserving a non-degenerate anti-symmetric bilinear form on  $\mathbf{C}^{2n}$ .

## 4.2 The symplectic group and the oscillator representation

The irreducible representation of the Heisenberg group we have been studying provides a projective representation of the symplectic group, which we'll construct in this section. This has various names, of which we'll choose Roger Howe's "oscillator representation." For more details, a good source is [7].

## 4.2.1 The Poisson bracket and the Lie algebras $\mathfrak{h}_{2n+1}$ and $\mathfrak{sp}(2n, \mathbf{R})$

In the last section we studied the Lie algebra of the Heisenberg group, which is 2n + 1 dimensional. As a Lie subalgebra of the functions on phase space P, it has basis  $1, q_j, p_j$  for j = 1, ..., n, with non-zero Lie brackets the Poisson brackets

$$\{q_j, p_k\} = \delta_{jk}$$

In this section we'll extend this to the Lie algebra of monomials of degree up to two.

The space of degree two monomials on P has as basis elements  $q_j p_k$  for all j, k, and  $q_j q_k, p_j p_k$  for  $j \leq k$ . The Poisson bracket of two of these is a linear combination of degree two monomials, so these provide a real Lie algebra of dimension  $2n^2 + n$ . This will turn out to be the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{sp}(2n, \mathbf{R})$  of the symplectic group  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ .

Here we will work out explicitly what happens for n = 1. The symplectic Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{sp}(2, \mathbf{R})$  has basis  $q^2, p^2, qp$  with non-zero Lie brackets

$$\left\{\frac{q^2}{2}, \frac{p^2}{2}\right\} = qp, \ \left\{qp, p^2\right\} = 2p^2, \ \left\{qp, q^2\right\} = -2q^2$$

This is isomorphic to the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{R})$  of 2 by 2 traceless real matrices, with bracket the commutator, where a conventional basis is

$$E = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad F = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad G = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$$

The isomorphism is explicitly given by

$$\frac{q^2}{2} \leftrightarrow E, \quad -\frac{p^2}{2} \leftrightarrow F, \quad -qp \leftrightarrow G$$

$$-aqp + \frac{bq^2}{2} - \frac{cp^2}{2} \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & -a \end{pmatrix}$$

Putting together the Lie algebras  $\mathfrak{h}_3$  and  $\mathfrak{sp}(2, \mathbf{R})$ , we get not the direct sum of the Lie algebras but something more interesting, due to the non-zero Poisson brackets between degree two and degree one monomials:

$$\{qp,q\} = -q. \ \{qp,p\} = p$$
  
 $\{\frac{p^2}{2},q\} = -p, \ \{\frac{q^2}{2},p\} = q$ 

These are the infinitesimal expression of the fact that we are looking not at the product group  $H_3 \times Sp(2, \mathbf{R})$ , but at a semidirect product  $H_3 \rtimes Sp(2, \mathbf{R})$ , which uses the fact that the action of  $Sp(2, \mathbf{R})$  on phase space gives an action on  $H_3$  by automorphisms.

From these relations one can see that

$$-qp \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$$

generates a group **R** acting on the q direction in the qp plane by  $e^t$ , on the p direction by  $e^{-t}$ . The element

$$\frac{1}{2}(q^2 + p^2) \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1\\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

generates an SO(2) subgroup of rotations in the qp plane.

### 4.2.2 The Schrödinger model for the oscillator representation

We have seen that the Schrödinger representation is given as a representation of  $\mathfrak{h}_3$  by the operators

$$\pi'_{S}(q) = -iQ = -iq, \ \pi'_{S}(p) = -iP = -\frac{d}{dq}, \ \pi'_{S}(1) = -i\mathbf{1}$$

Dirac's original definition of "quantization" asked for an extension of this representation from linear functions to all functions on phase space, i.e. a choice of operators that would take any polynomial in q and p to an operator, with Poisson bracket of functions going to commutator of operators, so a Lie algebra homomorphism. But going from functions of q and p to operators built out of Q and P, one runs into "operator-ordering" ambiguities since Q and P do not commute. It turns out that one can get a Lie algebra homomorphism for polynomials up to degree two, but this is impossible in higher degree (Groenewoldvan Hove theorem).

or by

What works in degree two is to extend the Schrödinger representation to a representation of  $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{R})$  (and of the semi-direct product with  $\mathfrak{h}_3$ ) by taking

$$\pi'_S(q^2) = -iQ^2 = -iq^2, \ \ \pi'_S(p^2) = -iP^2 = i\frac{d^2}{dq^2}$$

and making the choice

$$\pi'_S(qp) = -i\frac{1}{2}(QP + PQ) = -i\frac{1}{2}(2QP - i\mathbf{1}) = -q\frac{d}{dq} - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{1}$$

(which gives a skew-adjoint operator).

These operators will satisfy the commutation relations given by the Lie bracket of  $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{R})$ , so give a representation, which is the oscillator representation (it has many other names, including the "Weil representation"). The representation will be on the same space as the Schrödinger representation, extending the action of the Heisenberg Lie algebra, so we will often denote it by the same symbol  $\pi_S$ .

One would like to exponentiate the Lie algebra representation operators to get a representation of the Lie group  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$ . In the case of  $\pi'_S(qp)$  the operator exponentiates to an operator on functions which rescales in the q variable. It is though not so easy to exponentiate the second order differential operator

$$-iP^2 = i\frac{d^2}{dq^2}$$

If one takes a Fourier transform to turn derivatives in q into multiplication operators, the problem just moves to the operator  $-iQ^2$  which changes from a multiplication operator to a second-order differential operator.

The problem is best thought of as having to do with exponentiating the Lie algebra element

$$\frac{1}{2}(q^2+p^2)$$

which generates the  $SO(2) \subset SL(2, \mathbf{R})$  subgroup of rotations in the qp plane. So, for the oscillator representation, we need to explicitly construct the operator

$$e^{\theta \pi'_S \left(\frac{1}{2}(q^2+p^2)\right)}$$

where

$$\pi'_S\left(\frac{1}{2}(q^2+p^2)\right) = -i\frac{1}{2}(Q^2+P^2) = -i\frac{1}{2}(q^2-\frac{d^2}{dq^2})$$

Changing notation from  $\theta$  to t, this is just the standard physics problem of solving the Schrödinger equation for the Hamiltonian  $H = \frac{1}{2}(Q^2 + P^2)$  and so constructing the unitary operator

$$U(t) = e^{-it\frac{1}{2}(Q^2 + P^2)} \tag{4.3}$$

With some effort (see for instance exercises 4 and 5 of chapter III of [12]), one can derive a formula for the kernel  $K_t(q, q')$  (known in physics as the "propagator") where

$$(U(t)\psi)(q) = \int_{\mathbf{R}} K_t(q,q')\psi(q')dq'$$

One finds

$$K_t(q,q') = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi\sin t}} \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \begin{pmatrix} q & q' \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} \frac{\cos t}{\sin t} & -\frac{1}{\sin t} \\ -\frac{1}{\sin t} & \frac{\cos t}{\sin t} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} q \\ q' \end{pmatrix}\right)$$
(4.4)

This expression requires interpretation as a distribution defined as a boundary value of a holomorphic function, replacing t by  $t - i\epsilon$  and taking the limit as positive  $\epsilon$  vanishes.

One can show that

$$\lim_{\epsilon \to 0^+} U(\frac{\pi}{2} - i\epsilon) = e^{i\frac{\pi}{4}}\mathcal{F}$$

This is the oscillator representation operator for an element of the symplectic group corresponding to a  $\frac{\pi}{2}$  rotation in the q, p plane, interchanging the role of q and p. As expected from the Stone-von Neumann theorem, one gets the Fourier transform, up to a phase factor. The calculation of the propagator fixes the phase factor. In some sense, rotations by arbitrary values of t will give "fractional Fourier transforms."

Rotation by  $\pi$  in the q, p plane is given by

 $i\mathcal{F}^2$ 

The  $\mathcal{F}^2$  is as expected since  $\mathcal{F}^2$  acts on functions by

$$\psi(q) \to \mathcal{F}^2 \psi(q) = \psi(-q)$$

corresponding to a rotation by  $\pi$  taking q to -q. Rotation by  $2\pi$  is given by  $-\mathcal{F}^4 = -1$  rather than the **1** expected if U(t) is to be a true (rather than up to  $\pm 1$ ) representation of  $SO(2) \subset SL(2, \mathbf{R})$ . This is a precise analog of what happens when we take the spinor Lie algebra representation of SO(3) and exponentiate: we find that rotating around an axis by  $2\pi$  gives a factor of -1. The representation is only a projective (up to sign) representation of SO(3). To get a true representation, one needs the double cover Spin(3) = SU(2). Here again we have a representation up to sign and need a double cover of  $Sp(2, \mathbf{R})$ . This will be the metaplectic group  $Mp(2, \mathbf{R})$ , which is not a matrix group.

### 4.2.3 The Bargmann-Fock model for the oscillator representation

The best way to calculate the phase factors in the exponentiated version of the oscillator representation is not to use the Schrödinger version of the representation and the complicated formula 4.4 for the propagator, but to instead use the

Bargmann-Fock version. Here the representation is on the space of polynomials  $\mathbf{C}[w]$  (with the Bargmann-Fock inner product) and the operators

$$a = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(Q + iP) = \frac{d}{dw}, \ a^{\dagger} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(Q - iP) = w$$

provide a representation of the complexified Heisenberg Lie algebra (which is the standard one on the real Lie algebra).

As in the Schrödinger case, one can extend this representation to the oscillator representation of  $\mathfrak{sp}(2n, \mathbf{R})$  by taking quadratic combinations of the Heisenberg Lie algebra operators. In particular, using

$$\frac{1}{2}(Q^2 + P^2) = \frac{1}{2}(a^{\dagger}a + aa^{\dagger}) = a^{\dagger}a + \frac{1}{2}$$

one has (writing elements of  $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{R})$  both as quadratic polynomials and as matrices)

$$\pi'_{BF}(\frac{1}{2}(q^2+p^2)) = \pi'_{BF}(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1\\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}) = -i(a^{\dagger}a + \frac{1}{2}) = -i(w\frac{d}{dw} + \frac{1}{2})$$

This operator can easily be exponentiated:

$$e^{\theta \pi'_{BF}(\frac{1}{2}(q^2+p^2))}$$

acts on  $\mathbf{C}[w]$  by multiplying the monomial  $w^n$  by  $e^{-i\theta(n+\frac{1}{2})}$ . This gives the minus sign previously discussed for  $\theta = 2\pi$ .

In this representation the other two basis elements of  $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{R})$  are

$$\pi'_{BF}(-qp) = \pi'_{BF}\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0\\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix} = -\frac{1}{2}((a^{\dagger})^2 - a^2)$$
$$\pi'_{BF}(q^2 - p^2) = \pi'_{BF}\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1\\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} = -\frac{i}{2}((a^{\dagger})^2 + a^2)$$

Note that these operators do not change the parity of monomials they act on, and you can get from any monomial of a given parity to any other other of the same parity by applying these operators repeatedly. So, the oscillator representations we have constructed here is the sum of two irreducibles (all polynomials of even degree, and all polynomials of odd degree).

#### 4.2.4 The symplectic group and automorphisms of the Heisenberg Lie group

Since the definition of the Heisenberg Lie algebra and Lie group only depend on the antisymmetric bilinear form  $\Omega$  on  $M = \mathbb{R}^{2n}$ , the group  $Sp(2n, \mathbb{R})$  of linear maps preserving  $\Omega$  acts on this Lie algebra and group as automorphisms. Using  $(v, z) \in V \oplus \mathbb{R}$  as coordinates on  $H_{2n+1}$ , the action of  $g \in Sp(2n, \mathbb{R})$  on the Heisenberg group is

$$\Phi_g(v,z) = (gv,z)$$
Using this automorphism, one can construct the semi-direct product

$$H_{2n+1} \rtimes Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$$

which is sometimes called the "Jacobi group."

We also can use these automorphisms to act on the set of representations of  $H_{2n+1},$  taking  $\pi \to \pi_g$ 

where

$$\pi_a(v,z) = \pi(\Phi_a(v,z))$$

If  $\pi$  is irreducible,  $\pi_g$  will also be irreducible, and by the Stone-von Neumann theorem there will be unitary operators  $U_g$  such that

$$\pi_g = U_g \pi_S U_g^{-1}$$

By Schur's lemma, these operators will be unique up to a phase factor. They will then provide a representation of  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  up to a phase factor (a projective representation)

$$U_{g_1}U_{g_2} = e^{i\theta(g_1,g_2)}U_{g_1g_2}$$

By changing the  $U_g$  by a phase factor

$$U_q \to V(g) = e^{i\phi(g)}U(g)$$

one can try to remove the projective factor from the multiplication law. As we have seen explicitly in the case n = 1, this can only be done up to sign, a problem much like that which occurs in the case of the spin representation of the rotation group. As in the case of the rotation group, one can get a true representation by going to a double cover of  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ , which we'll denote  $Mp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  and call the "metaplectic group." Two differences from the rotation group case are:

- In the rotation group case  $\pi_1(SO(n)) = \mathbb{Z}_2$  and the double cover Spin(n) is the universal cover. In the symplectic case  $\pi_1(Sp(2n, \mathbb{R})) = \mathbb{Z}$  and the metaplectic double cover is just one of many possible covering groups.
- Spin(n) can be identified with a group of finite-dimensional matrices. This is not true for  $Mp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ , a group which has no finite-dimensional faithful representations. It provides a very unusual example of where thinking of Lie theory just in terms of matrix groups is inadequate.

We will refer to the representation of  $Mp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  as the "oscillator representation (it goes my many other names, including Weil representation, Segal-Shale-Weil representation, etc.). The representation will be on the same space  $\mathcal{H}$  as the Schrödinger representation, extending the action of the Heisenberg Lie group, so we will often denote it by the same symbol  $\pi_S$  and also call the representation of the Heisenberg group by the same name. We will also describe this representation as being "essentially unique", meaning that all versions of it are the same up to unitary transformations, possible rescaling, and differences in the definition of  $\mathcal{H}$  related by dense inclusions.

## 4.3 Choice of polarization

### 4.3.1 Real polarizations and the Schrödinger representation

From the discussion in section 4.1.6, the real symplectic vector space M can be written as

 $M = L \oplus L^*$ 

where L is an n-dimensional vector space with basis  $X_j$  and  $L^*$  is the dual vector space with basis elements  $Y_j$  dual to the  $X_j$  (i.e.  $Y_j(X_k) = \delta_{jk}$ ). Note that for any vectors  $x, x' \in L \subset M$  one has  $\Omega(x, x') = 0$ . A subspace with this property is called "isotropic". The maximal dimension of a subspace of M on which  $\Omega$  is zero is n, and such isotropic subspaces are called "Lagrangian".  $L^*$ is also Lagrangian.

Since the definitions of the Heisenberg Lie algebra and Lie group depend only on the symplectic form  $\Omega$ , and by Stone-von Neumann there is only one irreducible representation, one might expect that the definition of this irreducible representation should depend just on  $\Omega$ . It turns out though that all constructions of this representation depend upon a choice of additional structure. We have seen that the construction of the Schrödinger representation depends on a choice of n position coordinates  $q_j$ , corresponding to the basis elements  $X_j$ of the Lie algebra, which span a Lagrangian subspace of  $\mathbf{R}^{2n}$ . The Fourier transform takes this construction to a different one, depending on n momentum coordinates  $p_j$ , corresponding to the basis elements  $Y_j$  of the Lie algebra, which span a complementary Lagrangian subspace of  $\mathbf{R}^{2n}$ .

More generally, one can construct a version of the Schrödinger representation for any choice of Lagrangian subspace  $\ell \subset \mathbf{R}^{2n}$ . By the Stone-von Neumann theorem, for each  $\ell$  there will be an operator  $U_{\ell}$  giving a unitary equivalence with the construction for the standard Schrödinger choice of  $\ell = L$  spanned by the  $X_j$ . For  $\ell = L^*$  spanned by the  $Y_j$ ,  $U_{\ell}$  will be the Fourier transform, but for more general  $\ell$  its construction is rather non-trivial. A choice of a Lagrangian  $\ell$ and thus a decomposition  $M = \ell \oplus \ell^*$  is called a "real polarization" of M.

**Exercise.** Show that the choices of Lagrangian subspace  $\ell$  are parametrized by the space U(n)/O(n).

For the case n = 1,  $U(1)/O(1) = \mathbf{RP}^1$ , which is a circle, so real polarizations l are parametrized by an angle  $\theta$ . The operators  $U_{\ell}$  are the operators  $U(\theta)$  of equation 4.3, going once around  $\mathbf{RP}^1$  as  $\theta$  goes from 0 to  $\pi$ .

#### 4.3.2 Complex polarizations

The Bargmann-Fock construction involves a different sort of polarization, called a "complex polarization." Here one complexifies M and asks for Lagrangian subspaces W and  $\overline{W}$  such that

$$M \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C} = W \oplus \overline{W}$$

where W and  $\overline{W}$  are interchanged by the conjugation map on C.

Such a decomposition is equivalent to the choice of a compatible complex structure on M.

**Definition** (Complex structure). A complex structure on a real vector space M is a (real)-linear map

 $J:M\to M$ 

satisfying  $J^2 = -1$ .

**Definition** (Compatible complex structure). A complex structure on M is compatible with a symplectic form  $\Omega$  on M when

$$\Omega(Jv_1, Jv_2) = \Omega(v_1, v_2)$$

Such J only exist if the dimension of M is even and one can think of them as ways of making M a complex vector space (so identifying  $\mathbf{R}^{2n} = \mathbf{C}^n$ ), with multiplication by i given by J. J has no eigenvectors in M, but it does have complex eigenvalues  $\pm i$ , giving a decomposition

$$M \otimes \mathbf{C} = M_I^+ \oplus M_I^-$$

into  $\pm i$  eigenspaces for J. This will be a polarization of M when J is compatible with  $\Omega$  since then  $M_J^+$  and  $M_J^-$  are Lagrangian subspaces. To see this, note that for  $w_1, w_2 \in V_J^+$ 

$$\Omega(w_1, w_2) = \Omega(Jw_1, Jw_2) = \Omega(iw_1, iw_2) = -\Omega(w_1, w_2)$$

so must be zero.

Given both a symplectic form  $\Omega$  and a compatible complex structure J on M, M becomes not just a complex vector space, but a complex vector space with Hermitian inner product, defined by

$$\langle v_1, v_2 \rangle_J = \Omega(v_1, Jv_2) + i\Omega(v_1, v_2)$$

One can easily check that this is Hermitian, but it is not necessarily positive. To get a positive Hermitian structure one needs to impose an additional condition on J, that, for non-zero  $v \in M$  one has

$$\Omega(v, Jv) > 0$$

The possible choices of general complex structure J are parametrized by

$$GL(2n, \mathbf{R})/GL(n, \mathbf{C})$$

The compatibility condition implies that  $J \in Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ .

**Exercise.** Show that the space of possible positive complex structures compatible with  $\Omega$  is  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})/U(n)$ . This is called the Siegel upper half space.

#### The n = 1 case

For the case n = 1, the geometry of the space  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})/U(1)$  is best understood in terms of the geometry of  $\mathbf{CP}^1$ , the space of complex lines in  $\mathbf{C}^2$ . This is also the best way to understand the holomorphic line bundles on  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})/U(1)$  and how representations of  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$  can be constructed geometrically.

 $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  acts linearly on  $\mathbb{C}^2$  and transitively on the space  $\mathbb{CP}^1$ . The space  $\mathbb{CP}^1$  is a complex manifold, the Riemann version of the sphere  $S^2$ , and the action of  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  is holomorphic and thus an action by conformal transformations. One can choose the coordinate of the line in  $\mathbb{C}^2$  generated by

$$\begin{pmatrix} z_1 \\ z_2 \end{pmatrix}$$

to be  $z = z_1/z_2$ . This gives a good coordinate system away from one point, that of the line generated by  $z_1 = 1, z_2 = 0$ .

$$\begin{pmatrix} \alpha & \beta \\ \gamma & \delta \end{pmatrix} \in SL(2, \mathbf{C})$$

acts on this coordinate by the fractional linear transformation

$$z \to \begin{pmatrix} \alpha & \beta \\ \gamma & \delta \end{pmatrix} \cdot z = \frac{\alpha z + \beta}{\gamma z + \delta}$$

The subgroup  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$  of real matrices acts in the coordinate z preserving the sign of Im z and so does not act transitively. There are three orbits of the action: the upper and lower open half planes, and the real line. On  $\mathbf{CP}^1$ , the three orbits are two open hemispheres and the equator separating them. The correspondence of the three orbits in the z coordinate with the three orbits on  $\mathbf{CP}^1$  is that the point where z is not a good coordinate is on the equator orbit, and approached as one goes off to infinity in any direction in the z-plane.

Picking the point z = i in the upper half plane, the subgroup of elements of  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$  of elements stabilizing the point is the an SO(2) = U(1) subgroup given by elements of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} \cos\theta & \sin\theta \\ -\sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{pmatrix}$$

We can identify the upper half plane (which we'll denote  $\mathfrak{H}$ ) with  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})/U(1)$ .

The Cayley transform

$$z \to z' = \frac{z-i}{z+i}$$

takes the upper half plane to the unit disk. Conjugating an element of  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$  by this transformation gives a matrix of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} \alpha & \beta \\ \overline{\beta} & \overline{\alpha} \end{pmatrix}$$

where  $\alpha, \beta$  are complex numbers satisfying  $|\alpha|^2 - |\beta|^2 = 1$ . Such matrices give the subgroup SU(1,1) of  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  preserving a (1, 1) signature Hermitian form. It is isomorphic to  $SL(2, \mathbb{R})$  by the conjugation map. At each point in the open unit disk, SU(1,1) acts with stabilizer a U(1) subgroup. The Cayley transform takes z = i to z' = 0, which is stabilized by elements of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} e^{i\theta} & 0\\ 0 & e^{-i\theta} \end{pmatrix}$$

The subgroup of such elements acts by rotation of the unit disk about its center.

In this n = 1 case, changing complex polarization corresponds to changing the linear combinations of Q and P that define annihilation and creation operators. One gets an analog of the Bargmann-Fock construction for any  $\tau \in \mathbf{C}$ with positive imaginary part by changing

$$a = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(Q - iP) \rightarrow a_{\tau} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\frac{|\tau|}{\sqrt{\mathrm{Im}\ \tau}}(Q - \frac{1}{\tau}P)$$
$$a^{\dagger} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(Q + iP) \rightarrow a^{\dagger}_{\tau} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\frac{|\tau|}{\sqrt{\mathrm{Im}\ \tau}}(Q - \frac{1}{\tau}P)$$

 $a_{\tau}$  and  $a_{\tau}^{\dagger}$  are adjoint operators satisfying the commutation relation

$$[a_{\tau}, a_{\tau}^{\dagger}] = 1$$

and the representation is constructed by starting with a distinguished vector annihilated by  $a_{\tau}$  and generating the rest of the representation by applying powers of  $a_{\tau}^{\dagger}$ .

The unitary transformation to the Schrödinger representation will then take the distinguished vector to a solution of

$$a_{\tau}\psi(q) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \frac{|\tau|}{\sqrt{\mathrm{Im}\ \tau}} (Q - \frac{1}{\tau}P)\psi(q) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \frac{|\tau|}{\sqrt{\mathrm{Im}\ \tau}} (q + \frac{i}{\tau}\frac{d}{dq})\psi(q) = 0$$

Solutions will be proportional to

$$\psi(q) = e^{\frac{i}{2}\tau q^2}$$

and normalizable for Im  $\tau > 0$ .

To visualize the entire space of possible choices of polarization that give constructions of the oscillator representation for n = 1, one should think of the unit disk, with interior points corresponding to complex polarizations and the Bargmann-Fock construction for different  $\tau$  given above. As one approaches the boundary, the distinguished vectors annihilated by  $a_{\tau}$  become non-normalizable and leave the space  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$  (they will still be distributions in  $\mathcal{S}'(\mathbf{R})$ .

For more details and to see how this picture generalizes to  $n \ge 1$ , see Graeme Segal's notes on Symplectic manifolds and quantization [23].

## 4.4 Representations and holomorphic line bundles

While the oscillator representation is essentially unique, any construction of the representation requires specification of an additional structure. For complex polarizations, this additional structure is a complex subspace

$$W \subset M \otimes \mathbf{C}$$

There are corresponding operators on the oscillator representation, the annihilation operators, and a distinguished vector

$$|0\rangle_{\tau} \subset \mathcal{H}$$

annhilated by these operators. Here the notation reflects that in the physical interpretation in which annihilation and creation operators annihilate and create quanta, this is the state with zero quanta. The subscript  $\tau$  in general labels points in the Siegel upper half space. In the n = 1 case,  $\tau$  is a complex number with positive imaginary part, and in the Schrödinger representation one has explicitly

$$|0\rangle_{\tau} = e^{\frac{i}{2}\tau q^2}$$

More precisely, what the choice of  $\tau$  picks out is the one-dimensional complex line in  $\mathcal{H}$  generated by  $|0\rangle_{\tau} \subset \mathcal{H}$ . The space of these complex lines gives a complex line bundle  $\mathcal{L}$  over  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})/U(n)$ . This is not quite an  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ equivariant line bundle (i.e. with an action of  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  on  $\mathcal{L}$  that projects to the action by left multiplication on the base  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ ), since only the double cover  $Mp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  of  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  acts on  $\mathcal{H}$ .  $\mathcal{L}$  is a  $Mp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  equivariant bundle over the Siegel upper half space, described as  $Mp(2n, \mathbf{R})/U(n)$  where U(n) is a double-cover of U(n).

In the case n = 1, recall that  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  acts on  $\mathbb{CP}^1$ , with a subgroup SU(2) acting transitively, identifying  $SU(2)/U(1) = \mathbb{CP}^1$ . Two ways to form SU(2) equivariant line bundles over  $\mathbb{CP}^1$  are

• Consider the product

$$SU(2) \times \mathbf{C}$$

and quotient by the action

$$(g,w) \to (gh_{\theta}, e^{ik\theta}w)$$

of U(1), where

$$h_{\theta} = \begin{pmatrix} e^{i\theta} & 0\\ 0 & e^{-i\theta} \end{pmatrix}$$

This will give a line bundle we'll call  $L^k$ , with sections

$$\Gamma(L^k) = \{\phi: SU(2) \to \mathbf{C}, \ \phi(gh_\theta) = e^{ik\theta}\phi(g)\}$$

• Since a point in  $\mathbb{C}P^1$  is a complex line, one tautologically gets a line bundle (the fiber above a point is the point).

One can show that the tautological line bundle is isomorphic with  $L^{-1}$ , which is the dual line bundle to  $L = L^1$ . The bundle of holomorphic one-forms  $\mathbb{C}P^1$ is the line bundle  $L^2$ , so in some sense L is the bundle of 1/2-forms (the spinors in this two-dimensional geometry).

The  $L^k$  for all  $k \in \mathbb{Z}$  can be thought of as tensor powers of L or  $L^{-1}$ . It turns out that these are holomorphic line bundles and one can consider their holomorphic sections

$$\Gamma_{hol}(L^k)$$

(in the algebraic geometer's notation, this is  $H^0(\mathbf{CP}^1, \mathcal{O}(k))$ ). The action of SU(2) takes holomorphic sections to holomorphic sections and one finds (this is a simple example of the Borel-Weil theorem) that

$$\Gamma_{hol}(L^k) = \begin{cases} V^k & k \ge 0\\ 0 & k < 0 \end{cases}$$

where  $V^k$  is the irreducible representation of SU(2) of dimension k + 1 (in physicist's language, the spin  $\frac{k}{2}$  representation).

For the subgroup  $SU(1,1) \subset SL(2, \mathbb{C})$ , the story is quite different, since the action of SU(1,1) on  $\mathbb{CP}^1$  is not transitive. Instead there are three orbits: two hemispheres and the equator between them. On a hemisphere D, one can use the same definition of the line bundle  $L^k$  as a quotient given above (replacing SU(2) by U(1)) and get an irreducible representation of SU(1,1) on  $\Gamma_{hol}(L^k)$  but this space of sections is now infinite dimensional. This representation will be the discrete series representation  $D_k^+$ .

The even irreducible component of the oscillator representation can be realized as holomorphic sections of the line bundle  $\mathcal{L}$ , and one can show that  $\mathcal{L} \otimes \mathcal{L} = L$ .  $\mathcal{L}$  is a square root of L, and a fourth-root of the holomorphic one-forms.

On the subset  $D \subset \mathbf{CP}^1$  the line bundle L is the trivial bundle  $D \times \mathbf{C}$ , so one can choose coordinates on D and work with the first description of L given above, in which sections are holomorphic functions on D. L is an equivariant bundle under the action of  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$  and one wants to choose coordinates that transform simply under  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$ .

## Chapter 5

# Canonical quantization: fermions

In this chapter we'll discuss a precise analog of the canonical quantization formalism, in which one replaces the antisymmetric bilinear form by a symmetric one, and finds the spinor representation as an analog of the oscillator representation.

## 5.1 Anticommuting Variables and Pseudo-classical Mechanics

In the last chapter we studied canonical quantization for bosons starting with a classical phase space  $P = \mathbf{R}^{2n}$  and a Poisson bracket determined by a nondegenerate antisymmetric bilinear form. We took as functions on phase space the polynomial functions, isomorphic to the symmetric tensor product  $S^*(P^*)$ . In this section we'll begin the study of canonical quantization for fermions with pseudo-classical mechanics, an analog of Hamiltonian mechanics based instead on a non-degenerate symmetric bilinear form.

## 5.1.1 The Grassmann algebra of polynomials on anticommuting generators

Instead of looking at polynomial functions on  $P = \mathbf{R}^{2n}$ , given by symmetric expressions in coordinates  $q_j, p_j$ , and identified with elements of the symmetric tensor algebra  $S^*(P^*)$ , one can consider a vector space  $V = \mathbf{R}^m$ , not necessarily of even dimension, and look at the algebra  $\Lambda^*(V^*)$  of anti-symmetric tensor products on  $V^*$ . Taking a basis  $\xi_j$  of elements of  $V^*$ , one can identify  $\Lambda^*(V^*)$ with what physicists call the "Grassmann algebra" (or sometimes the "exterior algebra"), thinking of this as polynomials in anti-commuting variables  $\xi_j$ : **Definition** (Grassmann algebra). The algebra over the real numbers generated by  $\xi_j, j = 1, ..., n$ , satisfying the relations

$$\xi_j \xi_k + \xi_k \xi_j = 0$$

is called the Grassmann algebra.

Unlike the polynomial algebra, this algebra is finite dimensional over  ${\bf R},$  with basis

1, 
$$\xi_j$$
,  $\xi_j\xi_k$ ,  $\xi_j\xi_k\xi_l$ ,  $\cdots$ ,  $\xi_1\xi_2\cdots\xi_m$ 

for indices  $j < k < l < \cdots$  taking values  $1, 2, \ldots, m$ .

Remarkably, an analog of calculus can be defined on such functions. For the case n = 1, an arbitrary function is

$$F(\xi) = c_0 + c_1 \xi$$

and one can take its derivative to be

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial\xi}F = c_1$$

For larger values of n, an arbitrary function can be written as

$$F(\xi_1,\xi_2,\ldots,\xi_n)=F_A+\xi_jF_B$$

where  $F_A, F_B$  are functions that do not depend on the chosen  $\xi_j$  (one gets  $F_B$  by using the anticommutation relations to move  $\xi_j$  all the way to the left). Then one can define

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} F = F_B$$

This derivative operator has many of the same properties as the conventional derivative, although there are unconventional signs one must keep track of. An unusual property of this derivative that is easy to see is that one has

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} = 0$$

Taking the derivative of a product one finds this version of the Leibniz rule for monomials  ${\cal F}$  and  ${\cal G}$ 

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} (FG) = \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} F\right) G + (-1)^{|F|} F\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} G\right)$$

where |F| is the degree of the monomial F.

A notion of integration (often called the "Berezin integral") with many of the usual properties of an integral can also be defined. It has the peculiar feature of being the same operation as differentiation, defined in the n = 1 case by

$$\int (c_0 + c_1 \xi) d\xi = c_1$$

.

and for larger n by

$$\int F(\xi_1,\xi_2,\cdots,\xi_n)d\xi_1d\xi_2\cdots d\xi_n = \frac{\partial}{\partial\xi_n}\frac{\partial}{\partial\xi_{n-1}}\cdots\frac{\partial}{\partial\xi_1}F = c_n$$

where  $c_n$  is the coefficient of the basis element  $\xi_1 \xi_2 \cdots \xi_n$  in the expression of F in terms of basis elements.

This notion of integration is a linear operator on functions, and it satisfies an analog of integration by parts, since if

$$F = \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} G$$

then

$$\int F d\xi_j = \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} F = \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} \frac{\partial}{\partial \xi_j} G = 0$$

using the fact that repeated derivatives give zero.

# 5.1.2 Pseudo-classical mechanics and the fermionic Poisson bracket

Given an inner product (non-degenerate symmetric bilinear form) on  $V = \mathbb{R}^m$ , one can (Gram-Schmidt orthonormalization) choose an orthonormal basis with signature r, s (r elements have norm-squared +1, s have norm-squared -1 and r + s = m. Taking  $\xi_j \in V^*$  to be the coordinates with respect to this basis, one can define a fermionic version of the Poisson bracket on elements of  $V^*$  by

$$\{\xi_j,\xi_k\}_+ = \pm \delta_{jk}$$

with a plus sign for  $j = k = 1, \dots, r$  and a minus sign for  $j = k = r + 1, \dots, m$ , This is just the inner product on  $V^*$  corresponding to our choice of inner product on V. One can extend the definition of this inner product to all elements of  $\Lambda^*(V^*)$  by imposing a symmetry propert and Leibniz rule (derivation property) that has signs consistent with the anticommutativity of the generators. For monomials  $F_1, F_2, F_3$ , define

$${F_1F_2, F_3}_+ = F_1{F_2, F_3}_+ + (-1)^{|F_2||F_3|}{F_1, F_3}_+ F_2$$

where  $|F_2|$  and  $|F_3|$  are the degrees of  $F_2$  and  $F_3$ .

•

$${F_1, F_2}_+ = -(-1)^{|F_1||F_2|} {F_2, F_1}_+$$

These two properties can be used to compute the fermionic Poisson bracket for arbitrary functions in terms of the relations for generators.

Taking the case of a positive-definite inner product for simplicity, one can calculate explicitly the fermionic Poisson brackets for linear and quadratic combinations of the generators. One finds

$$\{\xi_j\xi_k,\xi_l\}_+ = \xi_j\{\xi_k,\xi_l\}_+ - \{\xi_j,\xi_l\}_+\xi_k = \delta_{kl}\xi_j - \delta_{jl}\xi_k \tag{5.1}$$

 $\{\xi_j\xi_k,\xi_l\xi_m\}_+ = \{\xi_j\xi_k,\xi_l\}_+\xi_m + \xi_l\{\xi_j\xi_k,\xi_m\}_+$  $= \delta_{kl}\xi_j\xi_m - \delta_{jl}\xi_k\xi_m + \delta_{km}\xi_l\xi_j - \delta_{jm}\xi_l\xi_k \tag{5.2}$ 

The second of these equations shows that the quadratic combinations of the generators  $\xi_j$  satisfy the relations of the Lie algebra of the group of rotations in n dimensions ( $\mathfrak{so}(n) = \mathfrak{spin}(n)$ ). The first shows that the  $\xi_k \xi_l$  acts on the  $\xi_j$  as infinitesimal rotations in the kl plane.

While the Poisson bracket defines a Lie algebra on  $S^*(P^*)$ , the fermionic Poisson bracket on  $\Lambda^*(V^*)$  provides an example of something called a Lie superalgebra. These can be defined for vector spaces with some usual and some fermionic coordinates:

**Definition** (Lie superalgebra). A Lie superalgebra structure on a real or complex vector space V is given by a Lie superbracket  $[\cdot, \cdot]_{\pm}$ . This is a bilinear map on V which on generators X, Y, Z (which may be usual or fermionic ones) satisfies

$$[X,Y]_{\pm} = -(-1)^{|X||Y|} [Y,X]_{\pm}$$

and a super-Jacobi identity

$$[X, [Y, Z]_{\pm}]_{\pm} = [[X, Y]_{\pm}, Z]_{\pm} + (-1)^{|X||Y|} [Y, [X, Z]_{\pm}]_{\pm}$$

where |X| takes value 0 for a usual generator, 1 for a fermionic generator.

Analogously to the bosonic case, the polynomials of order less than or equal to two provide a sub-Lie superalgebra of dimension  $1 + n + \frac{1}{2}(n^2 - n)$  (since there is one constant, n linear terms  $\xi_j$  and  $\frac{1}{2}(n^2 - n)$  quadratic terms  $\xi_j\xi_k$ ). On functions of order two this Lie superalgebra is a Lie algebra,  $\mathfrak{so}(n)$ . We will see in chapter 5.3 that the definition of a representation can be generalized to Lie superalgebras, and quantization will give a distinguished representation of this Lie superalgebra, in a manner quite parallel to that of the Schrödinger or Bargmann-Fock constructions of a representation in the bosonic case.

#### 5.1.3 Examples of pseudo-classical mechanics

In pseudo-classical mechanics, the dynamics will be determined by choosing a Hamiltonian h in  $\Lambda^*(V^*)$ . Observables will be other functions  $F \in \Lambda^*(V^*)$ , and they will satisfy the analog of Hamilton's equations

$$\frac{d}{dt}F = \{F,h\}_+$$

We'll consider two of the simplest possible examples.

and

#### The pseudo-classical spin degree of freedom

Using pseudo-classical mechanics, a "classical" analog can be found for something that is quintessentially quantum: the degree of freedom described by the spin  $\frac{1}{2}$  system of section 3.2. Taking  $V = \mathbf{R}^3$  with the standard inner product as fermionic phase space, one has three generators  $\xi_1, \xi_2, \xi_3 \in V^*$  satisfying the relations

$$\{\xi_j,\xi_k\}_+ = \delta_{jk}$$

and an 8 dimensional space of functions with basis

1, 
$$\xi_1$$
,  $\xi_2$ ,  $\xi_3$ ,  $\xi_1\xi_2$ ,  $\xi_1\xi_3$ ,  $\xi_2\xi_3$ ,  $\xi_1\xi_2\xi_3$ 

For the Hamiltonian function to be non-trivial and of even degree, it will have to be a linear combination

$$h = B_{12}\xi_1\xi_2 + B_{13}\xi_1\xi_3 + B_{23}\xi_2\xi_3$$

for some constants  $B_{12}, B_{13}, B_{23}$ . This can be written

$$h = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j,k=1}^{3} L_{jk} \xi_j \xi_k$$

where  $L_{jk}$  are the entries of the matrix

$$L = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & B_{12} & B_{13} \\ -B_{12} & 0 & B_{23} \\ -B_{13} & -B_{23} & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

The equations of motion on generators will be

$$\frac{d}{dt}\xi_j(t) = \{\xi_j, h\}_+ = -\{h, \xi_j\}_+$$

with solution

$$\xi_i(t) = e^{tL}\xi_i(0)$$

This will be a time-dependent rotation of the  $\xi_j$  in the plane perpendicular to

$$\mathbf{B} = (B_{23}, -B_{13}, B_{12})$$

at a constant speed proportional to  $|\mathbf{B}|$ .

#### The pseudo-classical fermionic oscillator

To get a fermionic analog of the classical harmonic oscillator, for the case of d oscillators, take  $V={\bf R}^{2d}$  and Hamiltonian

$$h = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=1}^{d} (\xi_{2j} \xi_{2j-1} - \xi_{2j-1} \xi_{2j}) = \sum_{j=1}^{d} \xi_{2j} \xi_{2j-1}$$

From 5.1 and 5.2, quadratic products  $\xi_j \xi_k$  act on the generators by infinitesimal rotations in the jk plane, and satisfy the commutation relations of  $\mathfrak{so}(2d)$ .

As in the bosonic case, we can make the standard choice of complex structure  $J = J_0$  on  $\mathbf{R}^{2d}$  and get a decomposition

$$V^* \otimes \mathbf{C} = \mathbf{R}^{2d} \otimes \mathbf{C} = \mathbf{C}^d \oplus \mathbf{C}^d$$

into eigenspaces of J of eigenvalue  $\pm i$ . This is done by defining

$$\theta_j = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(\xi_{2j-1} - i\xi_{2j}), \quad \overline{\theta}_j = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(\xi_{2j-1} + i\xi_{2j})$$

for  $j = 1, \ldots, d$ . These satisfy the fermionic Poisson bracket relations

$$\{\theta_j, \theta_k\}_+ = \{\overline{\theta}_j, \overline{\theta}_k\}_+ = 0, \ \{\overline{\theta}_j, \theta_k\}_+ = \delta_{jk}$$

(where we have extended the inner product  $\{\cdot, \cdot\}_+$  to  $V^* \otimes \mathbb{C}$  by complex linearity).

In terms of the  $\theta_j$ , the Hamiltonian is

$$h = -\frac{i}{2} \sum_{j=1}^{d} (\theta_j \overline{\theta}_j - \overline{\theta}_j \theta_j) = -i \sum_{j=1}^{d} \theta_j \overline{\theta}_j$$

Using the derivation property of  $\{\cdot, \cdot\}_+$  one finds

$$\{h,\theta_j\}_+ = -i\sum_{k=1}^d (\theta_k\{\overline{\theta}_k,\theta_j\}_+ - \{\theta_k,\theta_j\}_+\overline{\theta}_k) = -i\theta_j$$

and, similarly,

$$\{h, \overline{\theta}_j\}_+ = i\overline{\theta}_j$$

so one sees that h is the generator of  $U(1) \subset U(d)$  phase rotations on the variables  $\theta_j$ . The equations of motion are

$$\frac{d}{dt}\theta_j = \{\theta_j, h\}_+ = i\theta_j, \quad \frac{d}{dt}\overline{\theta}_j = \{\overline{\theta}_j, h\}_+ = -i\overline{\theta}_j$$

with solutions

$$\theta_j(t) = e^{it}\theta_j(0), \quad \overline{\theta}_j(t) = e^{-it}\overline{\theta}_j(0)$$

## 5.2 Clifford Algebras

In the bosonic case, quantization was a homomorphism of Lie algebras taking coordinates  $q_j, p_j$  with Poisson bracket  $\{q_j, p_k\} = \delta_{jk}$  to operators  $-iQ_j, -iP_j$  with commutator

$$[-iQ_j, -iP_k] = -i\delta_{jk}\mathbf{1}$$

In the fermionic case we will have a homomorphism of Lie superalgebras, taking  $\xi_j$  with fermionic Poisson bracket  $\{\xi_j, \xi_k\} = \pm \delta_{jk}$  to operators  $\gamma_j$  satisfying anticommutation relations

These operators are the generators of a Clifford algebra, which we'll now turn to.

#### 5.2.1**Real Clifford algebras**

We can define real Clifford algebras  $\operatorname{Cliff}(r, s, \mathbf{R})$  for an inner product of arbitrary signature by

Definition (Real Clifford algebras, arbitrary signature). The real Clifford algebra in m = r + s variables is the algebra  $\text{Cliff}(r, s, \mathbf{R})$  over the real numbers generated by  $1, \gamma_i$  for  $j = 1, 2, \ldots, m$  satisfying the relations

$$[\gamma_j, \gamma_k]_+ = \pm 2\delta_{jk} \mathbf{1}$$

where we choose the + sign when j = k = 1, ..., r and the - sign when j = k = $r+1,\ldots,m$ .

In other words, different  $\gamma_j$  anticommute, but only the first r of them satisfy  $\gamma_j^2 = 1$ , with the other s of them satisfying  $\gamma_j^2 = -1$ . Working out some of the low dimensional examples, one finds:

• Cliff $(0, 1, \mathbf{R})$ . This has generators 1 and  $\gamma_1$ , satisfying

 $\gamma_1^2 = -1$ 

Taking real linear combinations of these two generators, the algebra one gets is just the algebra C of complex numbers, with  $\gamma_1$  playing the role of  $i = \sqrt{-1}.$ 

• Cliff $(0, 2, \mathbf{R})$ . This has generators  $1, \gamma_1, \gamma_2$  and a basis

$$1, \gamma_1, \gamma_2, \gamma_1\gamma_2$$

with

$$\gamma_1^2 = -1, \ \ \gamma_2^2 = -1, \ \ (\gamma_1 \gamma_2)^2 = \gamma_1 \gamma_2 \gamma_1 \gamma_2 = -\gamma_1^2 \gamma_2^2 = -1$$

This four dimensional algebra over the real numbers can be identified with the algebra  $\mathbf{H}$  of quaternions by taking

$$\gamma_1 \leftrightarrow \mathbf{i}, \ \gamma_2 \leftrightarrow \mathbf{j}, \ \gamma_1 \gamma_2 \leftrightarrow \mathbf{k}$$

• Cliff $(1, 1, \mathbf{R})$ . This is the algebra  $M(2, \mathbf{R})$  of real 2 by 2 matrices, with one possible identification as follows

$$1 \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \gamma_1 \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \gamma_2 \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \gamma_1 \gamma_2 \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$$

• Cliff(3,0, **R**). This is the algebra  $M(2, \mathbf{C})$  of complex 2 by 2 matrices, with one possible identification using Pauli matrices given by

$$1 \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\gamma_1 \leftrightarrow \sigma_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \gamma_2 \leftrightarrow \sigma_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -i \\ i & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \gamma_3 \leftrightarrow \sigma_3 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$$
$$\gamma_1 \gamma_2 \leftrightarrow i \sigma_3 = \begin{pmatrix} i & 0 \\ 0 & -i \end{pmatrix}, \quad \gamma_2 \gamma_3 \leftrightarrow i \sigma_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & i \\ i & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \gamma_1 \gamma_3 \leftrightarrow -i \sigma_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$
$$\gamma_1 \gamma_2 \gamma_3 \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} i & 0 \\ 0 & i \end{pmatrix}$$

It turns out that  $\text{Cliff}(r, s, \mathbf{R})$  is always one or two copies of matrices of real, complex or quaternionic elements, of dimension a power of 2, but this requires a rather intricate algebraic argument that we will not enter into here. For the details of this and the resulting pattern of algebras one gets, see for instance [15]. One special case where the pattern is relatively simple is when one has r = s. Then n = 2r is even dimensional and one finds

$$\operatorname{Cliff}(r, r, \mathbf{R}) = M(2^r, \mathbf{R})$$

#### 5.2.2 Clifford algebras and geometry

The Clifford algebra was defined above in terms of generators and relations, but it also has a coordinate invariant definition, based on the choice of a nondegenerate symmetric bilinear form  $(\cdot, \cdot)$ , i.e., an inner product. It gives a powerful tool for the study of the orthogonal group of transformations that preserve the inner product.

To see the relation between Clifford algebras and geometry, consider first the positive definite case  $\operatorname{Cliff}(m, \mathbf{R}) = \operatorname{Cliff}(m, 0, \mathbf{R})$  with the standard inner product. In a later chapter we'll discuss the geometry of Minkowski spacetime and special relativity, which uses the case m = 4 with signature 3,1. The generators of the Clifford algebra are well-known in that case as the Dirac  $\gamma$ matrices.

To an arbitrary vector

$$\mathbf{v} = (v_1, v_2, \dots, v_m) \in \mathbf{R}^m$$

one can associate the Clifford algebra element  $\mathbf{y} = \gamma(\mathbf{v})$  where  $\gamma$  is the map

$$\mathbf{v} \in \mathbf{R}^m \to \gamma(\mathbf{v}) = v_1 \gamma_1 + v_2 \gamma_2 + \dots + v_n \gamma_m \in \text{Cliff}(m, \mathbf{R})$$
(5.3)

Using the Clifford algebra relations for the  $\gamma_j$ , given two vectors  $\mathbf{v}$ ,  $\mathbf{w}$  the product of their associated Clifford algebra elements satisfies

$$\mathbf{\psi} \mathbf{\psi} + \mathbf{\psi} \mathbf{\psi} = [v_1 \gamma_1 + v_2 \gamma_2 + \dots + v_n \gamma_n, \ w_1 \gamma_1 + w_2 \gamma_2 + \dots + w_n \gamma_n]_+$$

$$= 2(v_1 w_1 + v_2 w_2 + \dots + v_m w_m)$$

$$= 2(\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{w})$$

$$(5.4)$$

Note that taking  $\mathbf{v} = \mathbf{w}$  one has

$$\mathbf{v}^2 = (\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{v}) = ||\mathbf{v}||^2$$

The Clifford algebra  $\operatorname{Cliff}(m, \mathbf{R})$  thus contains  $\mathbf{R}^m$  as the subspace of linear combinations of the generators  $\gamma_j$ . It can be thought of as a sort of enhancement of the vector space  $\mathbf{R}^m$  that encodes information about the inner product, and it will sometimes be written  $\operatorname{Cliff}(\mathbf{R}^m, (\cdot, \cdot))$ . In this larger structure vectors can be multiplied as well as added, with the multiplication determined by the inner product (equation 5.4). Note that different people use different conventions, with

$$\mathbf{y}\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{y}\mathbf{y} = -2(\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{w})$$

another common choice. One also sees variants without the factor of 2.

We'll consider two different ways of seeing the relationship between the Clifford algebra  $\operatorname{Cliff}(n, \mathbf{R})$  and the group O(m) of rotations in  $\mathbf{R}^m$ . The first is based upon the geometrical fact (known as the Cartan-Dieudonné theorem) that one can get any rotation by doing at most m orthogonal reflections in different hyperplanes. Orthogonal reflection in the hyperplane perpendicular to a vector  $\mathbf{w}$  takes a vector  $\mathbf{v}$  to the vector

$$\mathbf{v}' = \mathbf{v} - 2 \frac{(\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{w})}{(\mathbf{w}, \mathbf{w})} \mathbf{w}$$

something that can easily be seen from the following picture



Figure 5.1: Orthogonal reflection in the hyperplane perpendicular to w.

From now on we identify vectors  $\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{v}', \mathbf{w}$  with the corresponding Clifford algebra elements by the map  $\gamma$  of equation 5.3. The linear transformation given by reflection in  $\mathbf{w}$  is

$$\begin{split} \mathbf{\psi} \to \mathbf{\psi}' = \mathbf{\psi} - 2 \frac{(\mathbf{v}, \mathbf{w})}{(\mathbf{w}, \mathbf{w})} \mathbf{\psi} \\ = \mathbf{\psi} - (\mathbf{\psi} \mathbf{\psi} + \mathbf{\psi} \mathbf{\psi}) \frac{\mathbf{\psi}}{(\mathbf{w}, \mathbf{w})} \end{split}$$

Since

$$\oint \frac{\oint}{(\mathbf{w}, \mathbf{w})} = \frac{(\mathbf{w}, \mathbf{w})}{(\mathbf{w}, \mathbf{w})} = 1$$

٦

we have (for non-zero vectors  $\mathbf{w}$ )

$$\mathbf{\dot{w}}^{-1} = \frac{\mathbf{\dot{w}}}{(\mathbf{w}, \mathbf{w})}$$

and the reflection transformation is just conjugation by  $\psi$  times a minus sign

$$\mathbf{v} \to \mathbf{v}' = \mathbf{v} - \mathbf{v} - \mathbf{v} \mathbf{v} \mathbf{v} \mathbf{v}^{-1} = -\mathbf{v} \mathbf{v} \mathbf{v} \mathbf{v}^{-1}$$

Identifying vectors with Clifford algebra elements, the orthogonal transformation that is the result of one reflection is given by a conjugation (with a minus sign). These reflections lie in the group O(m), but not in the subgroup SO(m), since they change orientation. The result of two reflections in hyperplanes orthogonal to  $\mathbf{w}_1$  and  $\mathbf{w}_2$  will be a conjugation by  $\mathbf{w}_2\mathbf{w}_1$ 

$$\mathbf{y} \rightarrow \mathbf{y}' = -\mathbf{y}_2(-\mathbf{y}_1\mathbf{y}\mathbf{y}_1^{-1})\mathbf{y}_2^{-1} = (\mathbf{y}_2\mathbf{y}_1)\mathbf{y}(\mathbf{y}_2\mathbf{y}_1)^{-1}$$

This will be a rotation preserving the orientation, so of determinant one and in the group SO(n).

This construction not only gives an efficient way of representing rotations (as conjugations in the Clifford algebra), but it also provides a construction of the group Spin(n) in arbitrary dimension n. One can define:

**Definition** (Spin(m)). The group Spin(m) is the group of invertible elements of the Clifford algebra Cliff(m) of the form

$$\mathbf{\psi}_1 \mathbf{\psi}_2 \cdots \mathbf{\psi}_k$$

where the vectors  $\mathbf{w}_j$  for  $j = 1, \dots, k$  ( $k \leq n$ ) are vectors in  $\mathbf{R}^m$  satisfying  $|\mathbf{w}_j|^2 = 1$  and k is even. Group multiplication is Clifford algebra multiplication.

The action of Spin(m) on vectors  $\mathbf{v} \in \mathbf{R}^n$  will be given by conjugation

$$\mathbf{y} \to (\mathbf{w}_1 \mathbf{w}_2 \cdots \mathbf{w}_k) \mathbf{y} (\mathbf{w}_1 \mathbf{w}_2 \cdots \mathbf{w}_k)^{-1}$$
(5.5)

and this will correspond to a rotation of the vector **v**. One can see here the characteristic fact that there are two elements of the Spin(m) group giving the same rotation in SO(m) by noticing that changing the sign of the Clifford algebra element  $\mathbf{\psi}_1 \mathbf{\psi}_2 \cdots \mathbf{\psi}_k$  does not change the conjugation action, where signs cancel.

For a second approach to understanding rotations in arbitrary dimension, one can use the fact that these are generated by taking products of rotations in the coordinate planes. A rotation by an angle  $\theta$  in the *jk* coordinate plane (j < k) will be given by

$$\mathbf{v} \to e^{\theta \epsilon_{jk}} \mathbf{v}$$

where  $\epsilon_{jk}$  is an *m* by *m* matrix with only two non-zero entries: jk entry -1 and kj entry +1. Restricting attention to the jk plane,  $e^{\theta \epsilon_{jk}}$  acts as the standard rotation matrix in the plane

$$\begin{pmatrix} v_j \\ v_k \end{pmatrix} \rightarrow \begin{pmatrix} \cos \theta & -\sin \theta \\ \sin \theta & \cos \theta \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} v_j \\ v_k \end{pmatrix}$$

In the SO(3) case there are three of these matrices

$$\epsilon_{23} = l_1, \ \epsilon_{13} = -l_2, \ \epsilon_{12} = l_3$$

providing a basis of the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{so}(3)$ . In *m* dimensions there will be  $\frac{1}{2}(m^2 - m)$  of them, providing a basis of the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{so}(m)$ .

In dimension m we can use elements of the Clifford algebra to get these same rotation transformations, but as conjugations in the Clifford algebra. To see how this works, consider the quadratic Clifford algebra element  $\gamma_j \gamma_k$  for  $j \neq k$  and notice that

$$(\gamma_j \gamma_k)^2 = \gamma_j \gamma_k \gamma_j \gamma_k = -\gamma_j \gamma_j \gamma_k \gamma_k = -1$$

so one has

$$e^{\frac{\theta}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k} = \left(1 - \frac{(\theta/2)^2}{2!} + \cdots\right) + \gamma_j\gamma_k\left(\theta/2 - \frac{(\theta/2)^3}{3!} + \cdots\right)$$
$$= \cos\left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right) + \gamma_j\gamma_k\sin\left(\frac{\theta}{2}\right)$$

Conjugating a vector  $v_j \gamma_j + v_k \gamma_k$  in the *jk* plane by this, one can show that

$$e^{-\frac{\theta}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k}(v_j\gamma_j+v_k\gamma_k)e^{\frac{\theta}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k}=(v_j\cos\theta-v_k\sin\theta)\gamma_j+(v_j\sin\theta+v_k\cos\theta)\gamma_k$$

which is a rotation by  $\theta$  in the jk plane. Such a conjugation will also leave invariant the  $\gamma_l$  for  $l \neq j, k$ . Thus one has

$$e^{-\frac{\theta}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k}\gamma(\mathbf{v})e^{\frac{\theta}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k} = \gamma(e^{\theta\epsilon_{jk}}\mathbf{v})$$
(5.6)

and, taking the derivative at  $\theta = 0$ , the infinitesimal version

$$\left[-\frac{1}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k,\gamma(\mathbf{v})\right] = \gamma(\epsilon_{jk}\mathbf{v}) \tag{5.7}$$

One gets a double cover of the group of rotations, with here the elements  $e^{\frac{\theta}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k}$  of the Clifford algebra giving a double cover of the group of rotations in the jk plane (as  $\theta$  goes from 0 to  $2\pi$ ). General elements of the spin group can be constructed by multiplying these for different angles in different coordinate planes. The Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{spin}(n)$  can be identified with the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{so}(n)$  by

$$\epsilon_{jk} \leftrightarrow -\frac{1}{2} \gamma_j \gamma_k$$

Yet another way to see this would be to compute the commutators of the  $-\frac{1}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k$  for different values of j, k and show that they satisfy the same commutation relations as the corresponding matrices  $\epsilon_{jk}$ .

### 5.2.3 Complex Clifford algebras

If one allows complex coefficients in a real Clifford algebra  $\text{Cliff}(r, s, \mathbf{R})$ , then one gets a complex Clifford algebra:

**Definition** (Complex Clifford algebras). The complex Clifford algebra in m variables is the algebra Cliff $(m, \mathbb{C})$  over the complex numbers generated by  $1, \gamma_j$  for  $j = 1, 2, \ldots, m$  satisfying the relations

$$[\gamma_j, \gamma_k]_+ = 2\delta_{jk}$$

When one complexifies, the signature of the inner product no longer matters, since one can multiply a generator by i to change the sign of its square. One can write this fact as

$$\operatorname{Cliff}(r, s, \mathbf{R}) \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C} = \operatorname{Cliff}(m, \mathbf{C})$$

In a situation like this of several different real algebras that complexify to the sam complex algebra, these real algebras are called "real forms" of the complex algebra.

While the structure of real Clifford algebras depends in a complicated way on r and s, the structure of the complex Clifford algebras is much simpler. We will not prove this here, but one has algebra isomorphisms:

• In the even dimensional case

$$\operatorname{Cliff}(2d, \mathbf{C}) \leftrightarrow M(2^d, \mathbf{C})$$

• In the odd dimensional case

$$\operatorname{Cliff}(2d+1, \mathbf{C}) \leftrightarrow M(2^d, \mathbf{C}) \oplus M(2^d, \mathbf{C})$$

Two properties of  $\operatorname{Cliff}(n, \mathbf{C})$  are

• As a vector space over  $\mathbf{C}$ , a basis of  $\operatorname{Cliff}(m, \mathbf{C})$  is the set of elements

1,  $\gamma_j$ ,  $\gamma_j\gamma_k$ ,  $\gamma_j\gamma_k\gamma_l$ , ...,  $\gamma_1\gamma_2\gamma_3\cdots\gamma_{m-1}\gamma_m$ 

for indices  $j, k, l, \dots \in 1, 2, \dots, n$ , with  $j < k < l < \dots$ . To show this, consider all products of the generators, and use the commutation relations for the  $\gamma_j$  to identify any such product with an element of this basis. The relation  $\gamma_j^2 = 1$  shows that repeated occurrences of a  $\gamma_j$  can be removed. The relation  $\gamma_j \gamma_k = -\gamma_k \gamma_j$  can then be used to put elements of the product in the order of a basis element as above.

• As a vector space over  $\mathbf{C}$ ,  $\operatorname{Cliff}(m, \mathbf{C})$  has dimension  $2^m$ . One way to see this is to consider the product

$$(1+\gamma_1)(1+\gamma_2)\cdots(1+\gamma_m)$$

which will have  $2^m$  terms that are exactly those of the basis listed above.

When n = 2d is even, there is an alternate definition of the complex Clifford algebra in terms of fermionic versions of annihilation and creation operators. For the case d = 1, one can define

$$a_F = \frac{1}{2}(\gamma_1 + i\gamma_2), \ a_F^{\dagger} = \frac{1}{2}(\gamma_1 - i\gamma_2)$$

The  $a_F$  and  $a_F^{\dagger}$  will satisfy canonical anticommutation relations (CAR)

$$[a_F, a_F^{\dagger}]_+ = 1, \ [a_F, a_F]_+ = [a_F^{\dagger}, a_F^{\dagger}]_+ = 0$$

called the "canonical anticommutation relations" (CAR).

The algebra generated over **C**, by the  $a_F, a_F^{\dagger}$  is four-dimensional, with basis.

1, 
$$a_F$$
,  $a_F^{\dagger}$ ,  $a_F^{\dagger}a_F$ 

It is isomorphic to the complex Clifford algebra  $\text{Cliff}(2, \mathbb{C})$  and can be identified with the algebra  $M(2, \mathbb{C})$  of 2 by 2 complex matrices, using

$$1 \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad a_F \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad a_F^{\dagger} \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad a_F^{\dagger} a_F \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$
(5.8)

For arbitrary d, one can define

$$a_{Fj} = \frac{1}{2}(\gamma_{2j-1} + i\gamma_{2j}), \ a_{Fj}^{\dagger} = \frac{1}{2}(\gamma_{2j-1} - i\gamma_{2j})$$

and get an alternate definition of the complex Clifford algebra:

**Definition** (Complex Clifford algebras, using annihilation and creation operators). The complex Clifford algebra Cliff(2d, C) is the algebra over C generated by  $1, a_{Fj}, a_{Fj}^{\dagger}$  for j = 1, 2, ..., d satisfying the CAR

$$[a_{Fj}, a_{Fk}^{\dagger}]_{+} = \delta_{jk} 1, \ \ [a_{Fj}, a_{Fk}]_{+} = [a_{Fj}^{\dagger}, a_{Fk}^{\dagger}]_{+} = 0$$

This shows that the complex Clifford algebra is a close analog of the Weyl algebra in the bosonic case, which could have been defined by

**Definition** (Complex Weyl algebras). The complex Weyl algebra is the algebra Weyl(2n, **C**) generated by the elements  $1, a_j, a_j^{\dagger}, j = 1, ..., n$  satisfying the canonical commutation relations (CCR)

$$[a_j, a_k^{\dagger}] = \delta_{jk} 1, \quad [a_j, a_k] = [a_j^{\dagger}, a_k^{\dagger}] = 0$$

Unlike the Clifford algebra, as a vector space over  $\mathbf{C}$ , Weyl $(2n, \mathbf{C})$  is infinite dimensional. Recall from the Bargmann-Fock construction that taking  $a_j = \frac{\partial}{\partial w_j}, a_j^{\dagger} = w_j$  one can identify this algebra with the algebra of polynomial coefficient differential operators. We will see later that the complex Clifford algebra in this case can be identified with "differential operators in fermionic variables  $\theta_j$ ", analogous to what happens in the bosonic (Weyl algebra) case.

## 5.3 Fermionic Quantization and Spinors

In this chapter we'll begin by investigating the fermionic analog of the notion of quantization, which takes functions of anticommuting variables on a phase space with symmetric bilinear form  $(\cdot, \cdot)$  and gives an algebra of operators with generators satisfying the relations of the corresponding Clifford algebra. We will then consider analogs of the constructions used in the bosonic case which there gave us the Schrödinger and Bargmann-Fock representations of the Weyl algebra on a space of states.

We know that for a fermionic oscillator with d degrees of freedom, the algebra of operators will be  $\operatorname{Cliff}(2d, \mathbb{C})$ , the algebra generated by annihilation and creation operators  $a_{Fj}, a_{Fj}^{\dagger}$ . These operators will act on  $\mathcal{H}_F = \mathcal{F}_d^+$ , a complex vector space of dimension  $2^d$ , and this will provide a fermionic analog of the bosonic  $\Gamma'_{BF}$  acting on  $\mathcal{F}_d$ . Since the spin group consists of invertible elements of the Clifford algebra, it has a representation on  $\mathcal{F}_d^+$ . This is known as the "spinor representation", and it can be constructed by analogy with the construction of the metaplectic representation in the bosonic case. We'll also consider the analog in the fermionic case of the Schrödinger representation, which turns out to have a problem with unitarity, but finds a use in physics as "ghost" degrees of freedom.

### 5.3.1 Quantization of pseudo-classical systems

In the bosonic case, quantization was based on finding a representation of the Heisenberg Lie algebra of linear functions on phase space, or more explicitly, for basis elements  $q_j, p_j$  of this Lie algebra finding operators  $Q_j, P_j$  satisfying the Heisenberg commutation relations. In the fermionic case, the analog of the Heisenberg Lie algebra is not a Lie algebra, but a Lie superalgebra, with basis elements  $1, \xi_j, j = 1, \ldots, n$  and a Lie superbracket given by the fermionic Poisson bracket, which on basis elements is

$$\{\xi_j, \xi_k\}_+ = \pm \delta_{jk}, \ \{\xi_j, 1\}_+ = 0, \ \{1, 1\}_+ = 0$$

Quantization is given by finding a representation of this Lie superalgebra. The definition of a Lie algebra representation can be generalized to that of a Lie superalgebra representation by:

**Definition** (Representation of a Lie superalgebra). A representation of a Lie superalgebra is a homomorphism  $\Phi$  preserving the superbracket

$$[\Phi(X), \Phi(Y)]_{\pm} = \Phi([X, Y]_{\pm})$$

This takes values in a Lie superalgebra of linear operators, with  $|\Phi(X)| = |X|$ and  $[\cdot, \cdot]_{\pm}$  the supercommutator

$$[\Phi(X), \Phi(Y)]_{\pm} = \Phi(X)\Phi(Y) - (-)^{|X||Y|}\Phi(Y)\Phi(X)$$

A representation of the pseudo-classical Lie superalgebra (and thus a quantization of the pseudo-classical system) will be given by finding a linear map  $\Gamma^+$ that takes basis elements  $\xi_i$  to operators  $\Gamma^+(\xi_i)$  satisfying the relations

$$[\Gamma^+(\xi_j), \Gamma^+(\xi_k)]_+ = \pm \delta_{jk} \Gamma^+(1), \quad [\Gamma^+(\xi_j), \Gamma^+(1)] = [\Gamma^+(1), \Gamma^+(1)] = 0$$

These relations can be satisfied by taking

$$\Gamma^+(\xi_j) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\gamma_j, \quad \Gamma^+(1) = \mathbf{1}$$

since then

$$[\Gamma^{+}(\xi_{j}), \Gamma^{+}(\xi_{k})]_{+} = \frac{1}{2}[\gamma_{j}, \gamma_{k}]_{+} = \pm \delta_{jk}$$

are exactly the Clifford algebra relations. This can be extended to a representation of the functions of the  $\xi_i$  of order two or less by

**Theorem.** A representation of the Lie superalgebra of anticommuting functions of coordinates  $\xi_j$  on  $\mathbf{R}^n$  of order two or less is given by

$$\Gamma^{+}(1) = \mathbf{1}, \quad \Gamma^{+}(\xi_{j}) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\gamma_{j}, \quad \Gamma^{+}(\xi_{j}\xi_{k}) = \frac{1}{2}\gamma_{j}\gamma_{k}$$

*Proof.* We have already seen that this is a representation for polynomials in  $\xi_j$  of degree zero and one. For simplicity just considering the case s = 0 (positive definite inner product), in degree two the fermionic Poisson bracket relations are given by equations 5.1 and 5.2. For 5.1, one can show that the products of Clifford algebra generators

$$\Gamma^+(\xi_j\xi_k) = \frac{1}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k$$

satisfy

$$\left[\frac{1}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k,\gamma_l\right] = \delta_{kl}\gamma_j - \delta_{jl}\gamma_k$$

by using the Clifford algebra relations, or by noting that this is the special case of equation 5.7 for  $\mathbf{v} = \mathbf{e}_l$ . That equation shows that commuting by  $-\frac{1}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k$  acts by the infinitesimal rotation  $\epsilon_{jk}$  in the jk coordinate plane.

For 5.2, the Clifford algebra relations can again be used to show

$$\left[\frac{1}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k, \frac{1}{2}\gamma_l\gamma_m\right] = \delta_{kl}\frac{1}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_m - \delta_{jl}\frac{1}{2}\gamma_k\gamma_m + \delta_{km}\frac{1}{2}\gamma_l\gamma_j - \delta_{jm}\frac{1}{2}\gamma_l\gamma_k$$

One could instead use the commutation relations for the  $\mathfrak{so}(n)$  Lie algebra satisfied by the basis elements  $\epsilon_{jk}$  corresponding to infinitesimal rotations. One must get identical commutation relations for the  $-\frac{1}{2}\gamma_j\gamma_k$  and can show that these are the relations needed for commutators of  $\Gamma^+(\xi_j\xi_k)$  and  $\Gamma^+(\xi_l\xi_m)$ .  $\Box$  Note that here we are not introducing the factors of i into the definition of quantization that in the bosonic case were necessary to get a unitary representation of the Lie group corresponding to the real Heisenberg Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{h}_{2d+1}$ . In the bosonic case we worked with all complex linear combinations of powers of the  $Q_j, P_j$  (the complex Weyl algebra Weyl(2d,  $\mathbf{C}$ )), and thus had to identify the specific complex linear combinations of these that gave unitary representations of the Lie algebra  $h_{2d+1} \rtimes \mathfrak{sp}(2d, \mathbf{R})$ . Here we are not complexifying for now, but working with the real Clifford algebra Cliff( $r, s, \mathbf{R}$ ), and it is the irreducible representations of this algebra that provide an analog of the unique interesting irreducible representation of  $\mathfrak{h}_{2d+1}$ . In the Clifford algebra case, the representation may be on real vector spaces, with no analog of the unitarity property of the  $\mathfrak{h}_{2d+1}$  representation.

In the bosonic case we found that  $Sp(2d, \mathbf{R})$  acted on the bosonic dual phase space, preserving the antisymmetric bilinear form  $\Omega$  that determined the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{h}_{2d+1}$ , so it acted on this Lie algebra by automorphisms. We saw (see chapter 4.2.4) that intertwining operators there gave us a representation of the double cover of  $Sp(2d, \mathbf{R})$  (the metaplectic representation), with the Lie algebra representation given by the quantization of quadratic functions of the  $q_j, p_j$ phase space coordinates. There is a closely analogous story in the fermionic case, where  $SO(r, s, \mathbf{R})$  acts on the fermionic phase space V, preserving the symmetric bilinear form  $(\cdot, \cdot)$  that determines the Clifford algebra relations. Here a representation of the spin group  $Spin(r, s, \mathbf{R})$  double covering  $SO(r, s, \mathbf{R})$  is constructed using intertwining operators, with the Lie algebra representation given by quadratic combinations of the quantizations of the fermionic coordinates  $\xi_j$ .

In order to have a full construction of a quantization of a pseudo-classical system, we need to construct the  $\Gamma^+(\xi_j)$  as linear operators on a state space. As mentioned in section 5.2.1, it can be shown that the real Clifford algebras  $\operatorname{Cliff}(r, s, \mathbf{R})$  are isomorphic to either one or two copies of the matrix algebras  $M(2^l, \mathbf{R}), M(2^l, \mathbf{C}), \text{ or } M(2^l, \mathbf{H})$ , with the power l depending on r, s. The irreducible representations of such a matrix algebra are just the column vectors of dimension  $2^l$ , and there will be either one or two such irreducible representations for  $\operatorname{Cliff}(r, s, \mathbf{R})$  depending on the number of copies of the matrix algebra. This is the fermionic analog of the Stone-von Neumann uniqueness result in the bosonic case.

#### 5.3.2 Two examples

#### Quantization of the pseudo-classical spin

As an example, one can consider the quantization of the pseudo-classical spin degree of freedom of section 5.1.3. In that case  $\Gamma^+$  takes values in Cliff(3, 0, **R**), for which an explicit identification with the algebra  $M(2, \mathbf{C})$  of two by two complex matrices was given in section 5.2.1. One has

$$\Gamma^+(\xi_j) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\gamma_j = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\sigma_j$$

and the Hamiltonian operator is

$$-iH = \Gamma^{+}(h) = \Gamma^{+}(B_{12}\xi_{1}\xi_{2} + B_{13}\xi_{1}\xi_{3} + B_{23}\xi_{2}\xi_{3})$$
$$= \frac{1}{2}(B_{12}\sigma_{1}\sigma_{2} + B_{13}\sigma_{1}\sigma_{3} + B_{23}\sigma_{2}\sigma_{3})$$
$$= i\frac{1}{2}(B_{1}\sigma_{1} + B_{2}\sigma_{2} + B_{3}\sigma_{3})$$

Physically this describes a spin- $\frac{1}{2}$  degree of freedom in a magnetic field, with fixed position (imagine an infinitely heavy spin- $\frac{1}{2}$  paritcle).

The pseudo-classical equation of motion

$$\frac{d}{dt}\xi_j(t) = -\{h,\xi_j\}_+$$

after quantization becomes the Heisenberg picture equation of motion for the spin operators

$$\frac{d}{dt}\mathbf{S}_H(t) = -i[\mathbf{S}_H \cdot \mathbf{B}, \mathbf{S}_H]$$

for the case of Hamiltonian

$$H = -\boldsymbol{\mu} \cdot \mathbf{B}$$

and magnetic moment operator

$$oldsymbol{\mu} = \mathbf{S}$$

Here the state space is  $\mathcal{H} = \mathbf{C}^2$ , with an explicit choice of basis given by our chosen identification of  $\text{Cliff}(3, 0, \mathbf{R})$  with two by two complex matrices. In the next sections we will consider the case of an even dimensional fermionic phase space, but there provide a basis-independent construction of the state space and the action of the Clifford algebra on it.

#### The Fermionic Oscillator

The simple change in the harmonic oscillator problem that takes one from bosons to fermions is the replacement of the bosonic annihilation and creation operators a and  $a^{\dagger}$  by fermionic annihilation and creation operators called  $a_F$  and  $a_F^{\dagger}$ , and replacement of the commutator

$$[A,B] \equiv AB - BA$$

of operators by the anticommutator

$$[A,B]_+ \equiv AB + BA$$

The commutation relations are now (for d = 1, a single degree of freedom)

$$[a_F, a_F^{\dagger}]_+ = \mathbf{1}, \ \ [a_F, a_F]_+ = 0, \ \ \ [a_F^{\dagger}, a_F^{\dagger}]_+ = 0$$

with the last two relations implying that  $a_F^2 = 0$  and  $(a_F^{\dagger})^2 = 0$ 

The fermionic number operator

$$N_F = a_F^{\dagger} a_F$$

now satisfies

$$N_F^2 = a_F^{\dagger} a_F a_F^{\dagger} a_F = a_F^{\dagger} (\mathbf{1} - a_F^{\dagger} a_F) a_F = N_F - a_F^{\dagger} a_F^2 a_F^2 = N_F$$

(using the fact that  $a_F^2 = a_F^{\dagger 2} = 0$ ). So one has

$$N_F^2 - N_F = N_F (N_F - 1) = 0$$

which implies that the eigenvalues of  $N_F$  are just 0 and 1. We'll denote eigenvectors with such eigenvalues by  $|0\rangle$  and  $|1\rangle$ . The simplest representation of the operators  $a_F$  and  $a_F^{\dagger}$  on a complex vector space  $\mathcal{H}_F$  will be on  $\mathbb{C}^2$ , and choosing the basis

$$0\rangle = \begin{pmatrix} 0\\1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad |1\rangle = \begin{pmatrix} 1\\0 \end{pmatrix}$$

the operators are represented as

$$a_F = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad a_F^{\dagger} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad N_F = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

Since

$$H = \frac{1}{2}(a_F^{\dagger}a_F + a_F a_F^{\dagger})$$

is just  $\frac{1}{2}$  the identity operator, to get a non-trivial quantum system, instead we make a sign change and set

$$H = \frac{1}{2}(a_F^{\dagger}a_F - a_Fa_F^{\dagger}) = N_F - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{1} = \begin{pmatrix} \frac{1}{2} & 0\\ 0 & -\frac{1}{2} \end{pmatrix}$$

The energies of the energy eigenstates  $|0\rangle$  and  $|1\rangle$  will then be  $\pm \frac{1}{2}$  since

$$H\left|0\right\rangle = -\frac{1}{2}\left|0\right\rangle, \ \ H\left|1\right\rangle = \frac{1}{2}\left|1\right\rangle$$

Taking complex linear combinations of the operators

$$a_F, a_F^{\dagger}, N_F, \mathbf{1}$$

we get all linear transformations of  $\mathcal{H}_F = \mathbf{C}^2$  (so this is an irreducible representation of the algebra of these operators). The relation to the Pauli matrices is

$$a_F^{\dagger} = \frac{1}{2}(\sigma_1 + i\sigma_2), \quad a_F = \frac{1}{2}(\sigma_1 - i\sigma_2), \quad H = \frac{1}{2}\sigma_3$$

For the case of d degrees of freedom one has

Definition (Canonical anticommutation relations). A set of 2d operators

$$a_{Fj}, a_{Fj}^{\dagger}, j = 1, \dots, d$$

is said to satisfy the canonical anticommutation relations (CAR) when one has

$$[a_{Fj}, a_{Fk}^{\dagger}]_{+} = \delta_{jk}\mathbf{1}, \quad [a_{Fj}, a_{Fk}]_{+} = 0, \quad [a_{Fj}^{\dagger}, a_{Fk}^{\dagger}]_{+} = 0$$

In this case one may choose as the state space the tensor product of N copies of the single fermionic oscillator state space

$$\mathcal{H}_F = (\mathbf{C}^2)^{\otimes d} = \underbrace{\mathbf{C}^2 \otimes \mathbf{C}^2 \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{C}^2}_{d \text{ times}}$$

The dimension of  $\mathcal{H}_F$  will be  $2^d$ . On this space an explicit construction of the operators  $a_{Fj}$  and  $a_{Fj}^{\dagger}$  in terms of Pauli matrices is

$$a_{Fj} = \underbrace{\sigma_3 \otimes \sigma_3 \otimes \cdots \otimes \sigma_3}_{j-1 \text{ times}} \otimes \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \otimes \mathbf{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{1}$$
$$a_{Fj}^{\dagger} = \underbrace{\sigma_3 \otimes \sigma_3 \otimes \cdots \otimes \sigma_3}_{j-1 \text{ times}} \otimes \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \otimes \mathbf{1} \otimes \cdots \otimes \mathbf{1}$$

The factors of  $\sigma_3$  are there as one possible way to ensure that

$$[a_{Fj}, a_{Fk}]_{+} = [a_{Fj}^{\dagger}, a_{Fk}^{\dagger}]_{+} = [a_{Fj}, a_{Fk}^{\dagger}]_{+} = 0$$

are satisfied for  $j \neq k$  since then one will get in the tensor product factors

$$[\sigma_3, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0\\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}]_+ = 0 \text{ or } [\sigma_3, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1\\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}]_+ = 0$$

While this sort of tensor product construction is useful for discussing the physics of multiple qubits, in general it is easier to not work with large tensor products, and the Fock space formalism we will describe in section 5.3.4 avoids this.

The number operators will be

$$N_{Fj} = a_F_j^{\dagger} a_{Fj}$$

These will commute with each other, so can be simultaneously diagonalized, with eigenvalues  $n_i = 0, 1$ . One can take as a basis of  $\mathcal{H}_F$  the  $2^d$  states

$$|n_1, n_2, \cdots, n_d\rangle$$

which are the natural basis states for  $(\mathbf{C}^2)^{\otimes d}$  given by d choices of either  $|0\rangle$  or  $|1\rangle$ .

As an example, for the case d = 3 the picture



Figure 5.2: N = 3 oscillator energy eigenstates.

shows the pattern of states and their energy levels for the bosonic and fermionic cases. In the bosonic case the lowest energy state is at positive energy and there are an infinite number of states of ever increasing energy. In the fermionic case the lowest energy state is at negative energy, with the pattern of energy eigenvalues of the finite number of states symmetric about the zero energy level.

### 5.3.3 The Schrödinger representation for fermions: ghosts

We would like to construct representations of  $\text{Cliff}(r, s, \mathbf{R})$  and thus fermionic state spaces by using analogous constructions to the Schrödinger and Bargmann-Fock ones in the bosonic case. The Schrödinger construction took the state space  $\mathcal{H}$  to be a space of functions on a subspace of the classical phase space which had the property that the basis coordinate functions Poisson-commuted. Two examples of this are the position coordinates  $q_j$ , since  $\{q_j, q_k\} = 0$ , or the momentum coordinates  $p_j$ , since  $\{p_j, p_k\} = 0$ . Unfortunately, for symmetric bilinear forms  $(\cdot, \cdot)$  of definite sign, such as the positive definite case  $\text{Cliff}(m, \mathbf{R})$ , the only subspace the bilinear form is zero on is the zero subspace.

To get an analog of the bosonic situation, one needs to take the case of signature (d, d). The fermionic phase space will then be 2d dimensional, with d dimensional subspaces on which  $(\cdot, \cdot)$  and thus the fermionic Poisson bracket is zero. Quantization will give the Clifford algebra

$$\operatorname{Cliff}(d, d, \mathbf{R}) = M(2^d, \mathbf{R})$$

which has just one irreducible representation,  $\mathbf{R}^{2^d}$ . This can be complexified to get a complex state space

$$\mathcal{H}_F = \mathbf{C}^{2^a}$$

This state space will come with a representation of  $Spin(d, d, \mathbf{R})$  from exponentiating quadratic combinations of the generators of  $Cliff(d, d, \mathbf{R})$ . However, this is a non-compact group, and one can show that on general grounds it cannot have faithful unitary finite dimensional representations, so there must be a problem with unitarity.

To see what happens explicitly, consider the simplest case d = 1 of one degree of freedom. In the bosonic case the classical phase space is  $\mathbf{R}^2$ , and quantization gives operators Q, P which in the Schrödinger representation act on functions of q, with Q = q and  $P = -i\frac{\partial}{\partial q}$ . In the fermionic case with signature (1, 1), basis coordinate functions on phase space are  $\xi_1, \xi_2$ , with

$$\{\xi_1,\xi_1\}_+ = 1, \ \{\xi_2,\xi_2\}_+ = -1, \ \{\xi_1,\xi_2\}_+ = 0$$

Defining

$$\eta = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(\xi_1 + \xi_2), \quad \pi = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(\xi_1 - \xi_2)$$

one gets objects with fermionic Poisson bracket analogous to those of q and p

$$\{\eta,\eta\}_+ = \{\pi,\pi\}_+ = 0, \ \{\eta,\pi\}_+ = 1$$

Quantizing, we get analogs of the Q, P operators

$$\widehat{\eta} = \Gamma^+(\eta) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} (\Gamma^+(\xi_1) + \Gamma^+(\xi_2)), \quad \widehat{\pi} = \Gamma^+(\pi) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} (\Gamma^+(\xi_1) - \Gamma^+(\xi_2))$$

which satisfy anticommutation relations

$$\widehat{\eta}^2 = \widehat{\pi}^2 = 0, \ \ \widehat{\eta}\widehat{\pi} + \widehat{\pi}\widehat{\eta} = 1$$

and can be realized as operators on the space of functions of one fermionic variable  $\eta$  as

$$\hat{\eta} =$$
multiplication by  $\eta, \quad \hat{\pi} = \frac{\partial}{\partial \eta}$ 

This state space is two complex dimensional, with an arbitrary state

$$f(\eta) = c_1 1 + c_2 \eta$$

with  $c_j$  complex numbers. The inner product on this space is given by the fermionic integral

$$(f_1(\eta), f_2(\eta)) = \int f_1^*(\eta) f_2(\eta) d\eta$$

with

$$f^*(\xi) = \overline{c}_1 1 + \overline{c}_2 \eta$$

With respect to this inner product, one has

$$(1,1) = (\eta,\eta) = 0, \quad (1,\eta) = (\eta,1) = 1$$

This inner product is indefinite and can take on negative values, since

$$(1-\eta,1-\eta)=-2$$

Having such negative-norm states ruins any standard interpretation of this as a physical system, since this negative number is supposed to the probability of finding the system in this state. Such quantum systems are called "ghosts", and do have applications in the description of various quantum systems, but only when a mechanism exists for the negative-norm states to cancel or otherwise be removed from the physical state space of the theory.

#### 5.3.4 Spinors and the Bargmann-Fock construction

While the fermionic analog of the Schrödinger construction does not give a unitary representation of the spin group, it turns out that the fermionic analog of the Bargmann-Fock construction does, on the fermionic oscillator state space discussed in chapter 5.3.2. This will work for the case of a positive definite symmetric bilinear form  $(\cdot, \cdot)$ . Note though that this will only work for fermionic phase spaces  $\mathbf{R}^m$  with m even, since a complex structure on the phase space is needed.

The corresponding pseudo-classical system will be the classical fermionic oscillator studied in section 5.1.3. Recall that this uses a choice of complex structure J on the fermionic phase space  $\mathbf{R}^{2d}$ , with the standard choice  $J = J_0$  coming from the relations

$$\theta_j = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} (\xi_{2j-1} - i\xi_{2j}), \quad \overline{\theta}_j = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} (\xi_{2j-1} + i\xi_{2j}) \tag{5.9}$$

for  $j = 1, \ldots, d$  between real and complex coordinates. Here  $(\cdot, \cdot)$  is positivedefinite, and the  $\xi_j$  are coordinates with respect to an orthonormal basis, so we have the standard relation  $\{\xi_j, \xi_k\}_+ = \delta_{jk}$  and the  $\theta_j, \overline{\theta}_j$  satisfy

$$\{\theta_j, \theta_k\}_+ = \{\overline{\theta}_j, \overline{\theta}_k\}_+ = 0, \ \{\overline{\theta}_j, \theta_k\}_+ = \delta_{jk}$$

In the bosonic case, extending the Poisson bracket from M to  $M \otimes \mathbb{C}$  by complex linearity gave an indefinite Hermitian form on  $M \otimes \mathbb{C}$ 

$$\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle = i\{\bar{\cdot}, \cdot\} = i\Omega(\bar{\cdot}, \cdot)$$

positive definite on  $M_J^+$  for positive J. In the fermionic case we can extend the fermionic Poisson bracket from V to  $V \otimes \mathbf{C}$  by complex linearity, getting a Hermitian form on  $V \otimes \mathbf{C}$ 

$$\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle = \{\overline{\cdot}, \cdot\}_+ = (\overline{\cdot}, \cdot)$$

This is positive definite on  $V_J^+$  (and also on  $V_J^-$ ) if the initial symmetric bilinear form was positive.

To quantize this system we need to find operators  $\Gamma^+(\theta_j)$  and  $\Gamma^+(\overline{\theta}_j)$  that satisfy

$$[\Gamma^{+}(\theta_{j}), \Gamma^{+}(\theta_{k})]_{+} = [\Gamma^{+}(\theta_{j}), \Gamma^{+}(\theta_{k})]_{+} = 0$$
$$[\Gamma^{+}(\overline{\theta}_{j}), \Gamma^{+}(\theta_{k})]_{+} = \delta_{jk}\mathbf{1}$$

but these are just the CAR satisfied by fermionic annihilation and creation operators. We can choose

$$\Gamma^+(\theta_j) = a_F_j^{\dagger}, \ \Gamma^+(\overline{\theta}_j) = a_{Fj}$$

and realize these operators as

$$a_{Fj} = \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_j}, \ a_F_j^{\dagger} =$$
multiplication by  $\theta_j$ 

on the state space  $\Lambda^* \mathbf{C}^d$  of polynomials in the anticommuting variables  $\theta_j$ . This is a complex vector space of dimension  $2^d$ , isomorphic with the state space  $\mathcal{H}_F$  of the fermionic oscillator in d degrees of freedom, with the isomorphism given by

$$1 \leftrightarrow |0\rangle_{F}$$
  

$$\theta_{j} \leftrightarrow a_{F_{j}^{\dagger}}|0\rangle_{F}$$
  

$$\theta_{j}\theta_{k} \leftrightarrow a_{F_{j}^{\dagger}}a_{F_{k}^{\dagger}}|0\rangle_{F}$$
  

$$\cdots$$
  

$$\theta_{1}\dots\theta_{d} \leftrightarrow a_{F_{1}^{\dagger}}a_{F_{2}^{\dagger}}\cdots a_{F_{d}^{\dagger}}|0\rangle_{F}$$

where the indices  $j, k, \ldots$  take values  $1, 2, \ldots, d$  and satisfy  $j < k < \cdots$ .

If one defines a Hermitian inner product  $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$  on  $\mathcal{H}_F$  by taking these basis elements to be orthonormal, the operators  $a_{Fj}$  and  $a_{Fj}^{\dagger}$  will be adjoints with respect to this inner product. This same inner product can also be defined using fermionic integration by analogy with the Bargmann-Fock definition in the bosonic case as

$$\langle f_1(\theta_1,\cdots,\theta_d), f_2(\theta_1,\cdots,\theta_d) \rangle = \int e^{-\sum_{j=1}^d \theta_j \overline{\theta}_j} \overline{f_1} f_2 d\overline{\theta} d\theta_1 \cdots d\overline{\theta}_d d\theta_d \quad (5.10)$$

where  $f_1$  and  $f_2$  are complex linear combinations of the powers of the anticommuting variables  $\theta_j$ . For the details of the construction of this inner product, see chapter 7.2 of [26] or chapters 7.5 and 7.6 of [32]. We will denote this state space as  $\mathcal{F}_d^+$  and refer to it as the fermionic Fock space. Since it is finite dimensional, there is no need for a completion as in the bosonic case.

The quantization using fermionic annihilation and creation operators given here provides an explicit realization of a representation of the Clifford algebra  $\operatorname{Cliff}(2d, \mathbf{R})$  on the complex vector space  $\mathcal{F}_d^+$ . The generators of the Clifford algebra are identified as operators on  $\mathcal{F}_d^+$  by

$$\gamma_{2j-1} = \sqrt{2}\Gamma^+(\xi_{2j-1}) = \sqrt{2}\Gamma^+\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(\theta_j + \overline{\theta}_j)\right) = a_{Fj} + a_{Fj}^\dagger$$
$$\gamma_{2j} = \sqrt{2}\Gamma^+(\xi_{2j}) = \sqrt{2}\Gamma^+\left(\frac{i}{\sqrt{2}}(\theta_j - \overline{\theta}_j)\right) = i(a_{Fj}^\dagger - a_{Fj})$$

Quantization of the pseudo-classical fermionic oscillator Hamiltonian  $\boldsymbol{h}$  of section 5.1.3 gives

$$\Gamma^{+}(h) = \Gamma^{+}\left(-\frac{i}{2}\sum_{j=1}^{d}(\theta_{j}\overline{\theta}_{j} - \overline{\theta}_{j}\theta_{j})\right) = -\frac{i}{2}\sum_{j=1}^{d}(a_{Fj}^{\dagger}a_{Fj} - a_{Fj}a_{Fj}^{\dagger}) = -iH$$
(5.11)

where H is the Hamiltonian operator for the fermionic oscillator used in section 5.3.2.

Taking quadratic combinations of the operators  $\gamma_j$  provides a representation of the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{so}(2d) = \mathfrak{spin}(2d)$ . This representation exponentiates to a representation up to sign of the group SO(2d), and a true representation of its double cover Spin(2d). The representation that we have constructed here on the fermionic oscillator state space  $\mathcal{F}_d^+$  is called the spinor representation of Spin(2d), and we will sometimes denote  $\mathcal{F}_d^+$  with this group action as S.

In the bosonic case,  $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{F}_d$  is an irreducible representation of the Heisenberg group, but as a representation of  $Mp(2d, \mathbf{R})$ , it has two irreducible components, corresponding to even and odd polynomials. The fermionic analog is that  $\mathcal{F}_d^+$ is irreducible under the action of the Clifford algebra  $\text{Cliff}(2d, \mathbf{C})$ . One way to show this is to show that  $\text{Cliff}(2d, \mathbf{C})$  is isomorphic to the matrix algebra  $M(2^d, \mathbf{C})$  and its action on  $\mathcal{H}_F = \mathbf{C}^{2^d}$  is isomorphic to the action of matrices on column vectors.

While  $\mathcal{F}_d^+$  is irreducible as a representation of the Clifford algebra, it is the sum of two irreducible representations of Spin(2d), the so-called "half-spinor" representations. Spin(2d) is generated by quadratic combinations of the Clifford algebra generators, so these will preserve the subspaces

$$S_{+} = \operatorname{span}\{|0\rangle_{F}, \quad a_{F_{j}}^{\dagger}a_{F_{k}}^{\dagger}|0\rangle_{F}, \cdots\} \subset S = \mathcal{F}_{d}^{+}$$

and

$$S_{-} = \operatorname{span}\{a_{F_{j}^{\dagger}}|0\rangle_{F}, \quad a_{F_{j}^{\dagger}}a_{F_{k}^{\dagger}}a_{F_{l}^{\dagger}}|0\rangle_{F}, \cdots\} \subset S = \mathcal{F}_{d}^{+}$$

corresponding to the action of an even or odd number of creation operators on  $|0\rangle_F$ . This is because quadratic combinations of the  $a_{Fj}$ ,  $a_{Fj}^{\dagger}$  preserve the parity of the number of creation operators used to get an element of S by action on  $|0\rangle_F$ .

# 5.3.5 Complex structures, $U(d) \subset SO(2d)$ and the spinor representation

The construction of the spinor representation given here has used a specific choice of the  $\theta_j, \overline{\theta}_j$  (see equations 5.9) and the fermionic annihilation and creation operators. This corresponds to a standard choice of complex structure  $J_0$ , which appears in a manner closely parallel to that of the Bargmann-Fock case of section 4.3.2. The difference here is that, for the analogous construction of spinors, the complex structure J must be chosen so as to preserve not an antisymmetric bilinear form  $\Omega$ , but the inner product, and one has

$$(J(\cdot), J(\cdot)) = (\cdot, \cdot)$$

We will here restrict to the case of  $(\cdot, \cdot)$  positive definite, and unlike in the bosonic case, no additional positivity condition on J will then be required.

J splits the complexification of the real phase space  $V = \mathbf{R}^{2d}$  with its coordinates  $\xi_j$  into a d dimensional complex vector space on which J = +i and a conjugate complex vector space on which J = -i. As in the bosonic case one has

$$\mathcal{V} \otimes \mathbf{C} = V_J^+ \oplus V_J^-$$

and quantization of vectors in  $V_J^+$  gives linear combinations of creation operators, while vectors in  $V_J^-$  are taken to linear combinations of annihilation operators. The choice of J is reflected in the existence of a distinguished direction  $|0\rangle_F$  in the spinor space  $S = \mathcal{F}_d^+$  which is determined (up to phase) by the condition that it is annihilated by all linear combinations of annihilation operators.

The choice of J also picks out a subgroup  $U(d) \subset SO(2d)$  of those orthogonal transformations that commute with J. Just as in the bosonic case, two different representations of the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{u}(d)$  of U(d) are used:

- The restriction to  $\mathfrak{u}(d) \subset \mathfrak{so}(2d)$  of the spinor representation described above. This exponentiates to give a representation not of U(d), but of a double cover of U(d) that is a subgroup of Spin(2d).
- By normal ordering operators, one shifts the spinor representation of  $\mathfrak{u}(d)$  by a constant and gets a representation that exponentiates to a true representation of U(d). This representation is reducible, with irreducible components the  $\Lambda^k(\mathbf{C}^d)$  for  $k = 0, 1, \ldots, d$ .

In both cases the representation of  $\mathfrak{u}(d)$  is constructed using quadratic combinations of annihilation and creation operators involving one annihilation operator and one creation operator, operators which annihilate  $|0\rangle_F$ . Non-zero pairs of two creation operators act non-trivially on  $|0\rangle_F$ , corresponding to the fact that elements of SO(2d) not in the U(d) subgroup take  $|0\rangle_F$  to a different state in the spinor representation.

#### Spinor-oscillator analogy 5.4

The oscillator representation of a symplectic group that we have been discussing is closely analogous to the spinor representation of the orthogonal group. Here we'll make this analogy very explicit. This parallelism is well-known in physics, where the "canonical formalism" in quantum mechanics comes in both a "bosonic" version, with canonical commutation relations, and a "fermionic" version, with canonical anti-commutation relations. Much of this material is worked out in great detail in [31].

#### Classical theory, Lie groups and Lie algebras 5.4.1

Q: Symmetric non-degenerate bilinear  $\Omega$ : Antisymmetric non-degenerate biform on  $V = \mathbf{R}^m$ linear form on  $M = \mathbf{R}^{2n}$ 

Lie group SO(d) preserving Q, with Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{so}(m)$ .

$$\pi_1(SO(m)) = \mathbf{Z}_2.$$

Spin(m), double cover of SO(m).

 $\Lambda^*(V)$ : anti-symmetric algebra on V. Polynomials in "anti-commuting variables  $\xi_i, j = 1, 2, \cdots m$ . For physicists these are "fermionic" variables.

Poisson bracket  $\{\cdot, \cdot\}_+$ . Lie bracket for Lie super-algebra of "anti-commuting functions" on  $V^*$ , determined by Q.

$$\{v_1, v_2\}_+ = Q(v_1, v_2)$$

Lie superalgebra of anticommuting poly- Lie algebra of polynomials on  $M^*$  of nomials on  $V^*$  of degree 0, 1, 2. Semidirect product of a Lie superalgebra (degree 0 and 1) and the orthogonal Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{so}(m, \mathbf{R})$  (degree 2).

Pseudo-classical mechanics.

Classical mechanics.

Lie group  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  preserving  $\Omega$ , with

 $Mp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ , double cover of  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ .

 $S^*(M)$ : symmetric algebra on M. Poly-

nomial functions on  $M^*$ . Generated by

a basis  $q_i, p_k, j, k = 1, 2, \dots n$  of M.

For physicists these are "bosonic" vari-

Poisson bracket  $\{\cdot, \cdot\}$ . Lie bracket for

Lie algebra of functions on  $M^*$ , deter-

degree 0, 1, 2. Semi-direct product of

the Heisenberg Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{h}_{2n+1}$  (de-

gree 0 and 1) and the symplectic Lie

algebra  $\mathfrak{sp}(2n, \mathbf{R})$  (degree 2).

Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{sp}(2n)$  $\pi_1(Sp(2n), \mathbf{R}) = \mathbf{Z}.$ 

ables.

mined by  $\Omega$ .

#### 5.4.2Quantum theory and representations

Spin representation S (unitary) on a Oscillator representation (unitary) on complex vector space of dimension  $2^d$  $\mathcal{H}$ , an infinite-dimensional Hilbert space. for m = 2d even.

Clifford algebra  $\operatorname{Cliff}(m, \mathbb{C})$ . For  $m = \operatorname{Weyl} \operatorname{algebra} U(\mathfrak{h}_{2n+1})/(Z-1)$ . This

2d even this is the algebra End(S), iso-algebra is infinite-dimensional over **C**. morphic to the matrix algebra  $M(2^d, \mathbf{C})$ .

The group SO(m) acts by automorphisms on  $\operatorname{Cliff}(m, \mathbf{C})$ .

For m = 2d even,  $\text{Cliff}(2d, \mathbf{C})$  has a unique irreducible module, the spin mod-algebra has an essentially unique irreule S. This is the spin representation as a Lie algebra representation of  $\mathfrak{so}(2d)$ . representation of the Heisenberg group Integrating to the group, one gets a projective (up to  $\pm$ ) representation of SO(2d), a true representation of the double cover Spin(2d).

For m = 2d even, the spin representation has two irreducible components. the half-spinors  $S^+, S^-$ , each of dimension  $2^{d-1}$ 

Generators  $\gamma_j$  of the Clifford algebra. On the spinor module S, identifying the Clifford algebra with a matrix algebra, these are the physicist's Dirac  $\gamma$ -matrices.

In even dimension, the Lie algebra representation operators for the spin representation are given by quadratic combinations of  $\gamma$ -matrices.

Spin 1/2 degree of freedom in m dimensions.

#### 5.4.3Real and complex polarizations

When Q has signature (d, d), choosing a real polarization  $V = L \oplus L^*$  $(Q = 0 \text{ on } L \text{ and on } L^*)$ , one can realize the spinor module as anticommuting functions on L. This will be an irreducible representation of the real form SO(d, d), non-unitary.

For m = 2d even, an orthogonal complex structure on V is a linear map J satisfying  $J^2 = -1$  and preserving the bilinear form Q. This picks out a The group  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$  acts by automorphism on the Weyl algebra.

Stone-von Neumann theorem: the Weyl ducible module  $\mathcal{H}$  that integrates to a on  $\mathcal{H}$ . Integrating to the group, one gets a projective (up to  $\pm$ ) representation of  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ , a true representation of the double cover  $Mp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ .

The oscillator representation has two irreducible components (an "even" and an "odd" component).

Generators  $Q_j, P_k$  of the Weyl algebra.

The Lie algebra representation operators for the oscillator representation are given by quadratic combinations of the  $Q_i, P_k$  operators.

Harmonic oscillator with n degrees of freedom.

Choosing a real polarization  $M = L \oplus$  $L^*$  one can realize (the Schrödinger representation) the  $Q_j, P_j$  operators respectively as multiplication and differentiation operators on  $L^2(L)$ . This representation will be unitary, both as a representation of the Heisenberg group and the metaplectic group.

A symplectic complex structure on Mis a linear map J satisfying  $J^2 = -1$ and preserving the bilinear form  $\Omega$ . This picks out a  $U(n) \subset Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})$ . Such

 $U(d) \subset SO(2d)$  and the space of such complex structures is the compact space  $S(\cdot, J \cdot)$  positive are parametrized by SO(2d)/U(d).

For m = 2d even, such a J gives a complex polarization  $V \otimes \mathbf{C} = W_I^+ \oplus W_I^ (\pm i \text{ eigenspaces of } J).$ 

For m = 2d even, taking complex linear combinations of the  $\gamma_i$  in  $W_I^+$  one can form adjoint operators  $a_j, a_j^{\dagger}$  on the spinor module, satisfying the canonical anti-commutation relations

$$[a_j, a_k^{\dagger}]_+ = \delta_{jk} \mathbf{1}$$

4

For each J there is a unique (up to scalar) vector in S annihilated by all the a operators. These are fibers of the line bundle  $\Lambda^d (W_I^+)^{-\frac{1}{2}}$ .

Applying  $a^{\dagger}$  operators

$$S = \Lambda^*(W_J^+) \otimes (\Lambda^d(W_J^+)^{-\frac{1}{2}})$$

Half-spinors are holomorphic sections of the line bundle  $\Lambda^n(W_I^+)^{-\frac{1}{2}}$  over SO(2d)/U(d)

$$S^+ = \Gamma_{hol}(\Lambda^n (W_J^+)^{-\frac{1}{2}})$$

J satisfying the positivity conditions the non-compact space  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})/U(n)$ .

Such a J gives a complex polarization  $M \otimes \mathbf{C} = W_I^+ \oplus W_I^- \ (\pm i \text{ eigenspaces})$ of J).

Taking complex linear combinations of the  $Q_j, P_j$  in  $W_J^+$  one can form adjoint operators  $a_j, a_j^{\dagger}$  on the oscillator representation, satisfying the canonical commutation relations

$$[a_j, a_k^{\dagger}] = \delta_{jk} \mathbf{1}$$

For each J there is a unique (up to scalar) vector (vacuum vector) in  $\mathcal{H}$ annihilated by all the *a* operators. These are fibers of the line bundle  $\Lambda^n (W_I^+)^{\frac{1}{2}}$ .

Applying  $a^{\dagger}$  operators

$$\mathcal{H} = S^*(W_J^+) \otimes (\Lambda^n (W_J^+)^{\frac{1}{2}})$$

The even component of the oscillator representation is holomorphic sections of the line bundle  $\Lambda^n(W_I^+)^{\frac{1}{2}}$  over  $Sp(2n, \mathbf{R})/U(n).$ 

$$\mathcal{H}_{even} = \Gamma_{hol}(\Lambda^n (W_J^+)^{-\frac{1}{2}})$$

#### 5.5For further reading

Some more detail about spin groups and the relationship between geometry and Clifford algebras can be found in [15], and an exhaustive reference is [21]. A good source for more details about Clifford algebras and spinors is chapter 12 of the representation theory textbook [27]. For the details of what happens for all  $\operatorname{Cliff}(r, s, \mathbf{R})$ , another good source is chapter 1 of [15].

For more about pseudo-classical mechanics and quantization, see [26] chapter 7 or the very readable original reference [2]. The Clifford algebra and fermionic quantization are discussed in chapter 20.3 of [11]. The fermionic quantization map, Clifford algebras, and the spinor representation are discussed in detail in [17]. For another discussion of the spinor representation from a similar point of view to the one here, see chapter 12 of [27]. Chapter 12 of [22] contains an extensive discussion of the role of different complex structures in the construction of the spinor representation.
## Chapter 6

# Free particles in three space dimensions

Generalizing the discussion of the quantum free particle in section 3.1.1 to the physical case of three spatial dimensions, states will be functions (or distributions) on  $\mathbf{R}^3$  and the Hamiltonian operator will be

$$H = \frac{1}{2m}(P_1^2 + P_2^2 + P_3^2) = -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m}\nabla^2$$

Fourier transforming to momentum space, the energy eigenvalue equation becomes

$$\frac{1}{2m}(P_1^2 + P_2^2 + P_3^2)\widetilde{\psi}(\mathbf{p}) = \frac{1}{2m}|\mathbf{p}|^2\widetilde{\psi}(\mathbf{p}) = E\widetilde{\psi}(\mathbf{p})$$

States of energy E ( $E \ge 0$ ) will be distributions on momentum space supported on the sphere of radius  $\sqrt{2mE}$ . Restricting to those distributions of the form

$$\overline{\psi}(\mathbf{p}) = \overline{\psi}_E(\phi, \theta)\delta(\rho - \sqrt{2mE})$$

in spherical coordinates, the space  $\mathcal{H}_E$  of energy eigenstates of energy E can be identified with the space of functions  $\tilde{\psi}_E(\phi,\theta)$  on the sphere of radius  $\sqrt{2mE}$ . This space has a Hermitian inner product given by integration over the sphere and one can take  $\mathcal{H}_E$  to be the square-integrable functions.

# 6.1 Irreducible representations of the Euclidean group $E_3$

There is a unitary representation on  $\mathcal{H}_E$  of the Euclidean group  $E_3 = \mathbf{R}^3 \rtimes SO(3)$ , the semi-direct product of translations and rotations. This is the representation induced from the action of  $E_3$  on  $\mathbf{R}^3$ . Recall that if a group G acts on a space X, it acts on functions on X by

$$f(x) \to f(g^{-1} \cdot x)$$

In this case the action of  $(\mathbf{a}, R) \in E_3$  (translation by  $\mathbf{a}$  and rotation by R) on momentum space wave functions will be by

$$\widetilde{\psi}(\mathbf{p}) \to e^{-i\mathbf{a}\cdot\mathbf{p}}\widetilde{\psi}(R^{-1}\mathbf{p})$$

One can show that this representation is irreducible and that one gets distinct representations for each R > 0.

Note that what we are doing here is just taking the Schrödinger representation in the case n = 3 and restricting it to a representation of  $E_3$ , which breaks up into a continuous sum over the  $\mathcal{H}_E$  for E > 0. Here the  $\mathbf{R}^3$  is the subgroup of the Heisenberg group that acts by translations in  $\mathbf{q}$ . The rotations SO(3) are the subgroup of  $Sp(6, \mathbf{R})$  given by rotating both  $\mathbf{q}$  and  $\mathbf{p}$  (preserving their dot product). On this subgroup the metaplectic group is a trivial double cover, so one can use  $Sp(6, \mathbf{R})$  instead of the double cover  $Mp(6, \mathbf{R})$ .

Another way to get this decomposition into irreducibles is to consider the Casimir operators of the Lie algebra of E(3). These are operators quadratic in the generators that commute with the generators. There are two of them:

$$|\mathbf{P}|^2 = P_1^2 + P_2^2 + P_3^2$$

and

$$\mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{P} = J_1 P_1 + J_2 P_2 + J_3 P_3$$

Here  $J_j$  is the operator that generates the action of rotations about the j axis. By Schur's lemma, on an irreducible representation these operators will act by scalars, and these scalars will characterize the irreducible representation. On our representation on  $\mathcal{H}_E$ , the first of these will act by 2mE, the second can be shown to act by 0.

The general theory of representations of groups  $N \rtimes K$ , where N is commutative, says that irreducible representations of such a group will correspond to pairs consisting of

- Orbits of K on the character group  $\widehat{N}$  of the abelian group N. Here the definition of the semi-direct product gives the action of K on N by automorphisms, which induces an action on the characters (homomorphisms  $\chi: N \to \mathbf{C}$ ).
- Irreducible representations of the stabilizer group  $K_{\chi} \subset K$ , the subgroup of K that leaves a character in the orbit invariant. Physicists often call this the "little group".

In the case we are looking at,  $N = \mathbf{R}^3$  and K = SO(3). The complete list of irreducible representations is labeled by the pairs:

• The trivial orbit  $0 \in \widehat{N}$  with stabilizer  $K_0 = SO(3)$ , which has irreducible representations labeled by  $n = 0, 1, 2, \ldots$ . These are just the irreducible representations of  $E_3$  on which  $\mathbb{R}^3$  acts trivially.

• Non-trivial orbits are spheres in the momentum space  $\mathbf{R}^3$  (which is the character group of the position space  $\mathbf{R}^3$ ). We'll label these by  $E = \frac{|\mathbf{p}|^2}{2m}$ . The stabilizer group of a vector  $\mathbf{p}$  on the sphere is the  $SO(2) \subset SO(3)$  subgroup of rotations about  $\mathbf{p}$ . Irreducible representations of this SO(2) are labeled by integers h.

Of the representations in the second class, our representation on  $\mathcal{H}_E$  is the one labeled by (E, 0). To get others, we need to find representations with nonzero eigenvalues of the second Casimir  $\mathbf{J} \cdot \mathbf{P}$ . On wave-functions of momentum  $\mathbf{p}$ , this operator is the operator that generates rotations about  $\mathbf{p}$  and will have eigenvalues  $h|\mathbf{p}|$ , where  $h \in \mathbf{Z}$  is called the "helicity". One way to get such representations is to take wavefunctions in  $\mathcal{H} \otimes \mathbf{C}^{|h|+1}$ , with the Hamiltonian acting trivially on the second factor, but the rotations acting on it by the spin|h|representation. This will break up into irreducibles of different helicities. In the next section we'll se how this works in the case  $|h| = \frac{1}{2}$ , where one needs to take the spin double cover of SO(3) (and the corresponding double cover of E(3)).

#### 6.2 The Dirac operator and spin $\frac{1}{2}$

In chapters 4 and 5 we saw how to quantize a classical system and get the Schrödinger representation describing a spin-less free particle, as well as how to quantize a pseudo-classical system and get a spin- $\frac{1}{2}$  degree of freedom. In this section we'll see that one can put these two together, getting a description of a free spin  $\frac{1}{2}$  particle, with a Hamiltonian that now has a square root, providing a non-relativistic version of the Dirac equation.

One can take as phase space the conventional classical phase space with 3 degrees of freedom and coordinates  $q_j, p_j$ , together with the three-dimensional pseudo-classical phase space with coordinates  $\xi_j$ . The non-zero Poisson super-brackets are

$$\{q_j, p_k\}_{\pm} = \delta_{jk}, \ \{\xi_j, \xi_k\}_{\pm} = \delta_{jk}$$

The Hamiltonian function for the free particle now has a square root  $p_1\xi_1 + p_2\xi_2 + p_3\xi_3$  in the sense that

$$h = \frac{1}{2m} \{\sum_{j=1}^{3} p_j \xi_j, \sum_{k=1}^{3} p_k \xi_k\}_{\pm} = \frac{1}{2m} \sum_{j,k=1}^{3} p_j \{\xi_j, \xi_k\}_{\pm} p_k = \frac{1}{2m} \sum_{j=1}^{3} p_j^2$$

This is a simple example of what is called a "supersymmetry": by extending the usual Lie algebra to a Lie superalgebra, we are able to find a generator which in some sense is a "square root" of the generator of time translation.

Quantization takes

$$p_1\xi_1 + p_2\xi_2 + p_3\xi_3 \rightarrow \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\boldsymbol{\sigma} \cdot \mathbf{P}$$

and the Hamiltonian operator can be written

$$H = \frac{1}{2m} [\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \boldsymbol{\sigma} \cdot \mathbf{P}, \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \boldsymbol{\sigma} \cdot \mathbf{P}]_{+} = \frac{1}{2m} (\boldsymbol{\sigma} \cdot \mathbf{P})^{2} = \frac{1}{2m} (P_{1}^{2} + P_{2}^{2} + P_{3}^{2})$$

One can define the Dirac operator in this context as

$$\boldsymbol{\partial} = \sigma_1 \frac{\partial}{\partial q_1} + \sigma_2 \frac{\partial}{\partial q_2} + \sigma_3 \frac{\partial}{\partial q_3} = \boldsymbol{\sigma} \cdot \boldsymbol{\nabla}$$

The Schrödinger equation now is called the "Pauli-Schrödinger" equation (or "Pauli equation") and given by

$$i\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\psi=-\frac{1}{2m}{\not\!\partial}^2\psi$$

where  $\psi$  is a two-component wave function.

This is nothing but two decoupled copies of the usual Schrödinger equation. The total angular momentum operator that generates rotations is different, since on the state space  $\mathcal{H} = L^2(\mathbf{R}^3) \otimes \mathbf{C}^2$ , rotations act on the  $\mathbf{C}^2$  not trivially, but by the spin representation. The helicity operator will be

$$\frac{1}{|\mathbf{P}|}\mathbf{J}\cdot\mathbf{P} = \frac{1}{|\mathbf{P}|}(\mathbf{L} + \frac{1}{2}\boldsymbol{\sigma})\cdot\mathbf{P}$$

The term involving the orbital angular momentum **L** will act trivially, as in the spin-less case, but the other term will act with eigenvalues  $\pm \frac{1}{2}$ . The space of solutions with a fixed energy will decompose into two different irreducible representations of (the double-cover of) E(3), distinguished by the eigenvalue of the helicity operator.

The Pauli-Schrödinger equation becomes much more interesting when one couples the free particle to an electromagnetic field. We will discuss this in detail in a later chapter, but the main point is that derivatives get replaced by covariant derivatives of a gauge field A, so

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \to \frac{\partial}{\partial t} - ieA_0, \ \boldsymbol{\nabla} \to \boldsymbol{\nabla} - ie\mathbf{A}$$
 (6.1)

The Pauli-Schrödinger equation becomes

$$i(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} - ieA_0)\psi = -\frac{1}{2m}(\boldsymbol{\sigma} \cdot (\boldsymbol{\nabla} - ie\mathbf{A}))^2\psi = -\frac{1}{2m}((\boldsymbol{\nabla} - ie\mathbf{A})^2 + e\boldsymbol{\sigma} \cdot \mathbf{B})\psi \quad (6.2)$$

with the magnetic field **B** corresponding to the vector potential A now giving a non-trivial coupling between the components of  $\psi$ .

## Chapter 7

# Non-relativistic quantum field theory

In the previous chapters we have discussed the quantum theory of a nonrelativistic single free particle, as well as the oscillator and spinor representations. In this chapter we'll put these two subjects together, getting quantum field theories describing arbitrary numbers of identical free particles, using the oscillator representation for bosons, the spinor representation for fermions. This subject is sometimes known as "second quantization", with first quantization giving solutions of the Schrödinger equation, second quantization treating this space of solutions as a classical or pseudo-classical phase space. Quantizing this phase space as a bosonic or fermionic oscillator, using an infinite-dimensional version of the Bargmann-Fock quantization, quantum field theory appears as an oscillator or spinor representation for an infinite number of degrees of freedom.

The fact that we are quantizing an infinite-dimensional phase space gives the subject a very different flavor. The material discussed in chapters 4 and 5 assumes a finite number of degrees of freedom and it is not clear how this generalizes (for instance, what is the right infinite-dimensional version of the metaplectic or spin group and their oscillator or spinor representations?). A crucial part of the story in finite dimensions, the Stone-von Neumann theorem for bosons or the analogous uniqueness of the spinor module for the Clifford algebra, no longer holds. This non-uniqueness means that for quantum field theories finding the correct state space becomes a major problem, even before one comes to questions about operators acting on it.

For free quantum field theories, which can be decomposed into an infinite number of finite-dimensional oscillator problems that do not interact with each other, the mathematical issues can be addressed. But for interacting field theories, corresponding physically to arbitrary numbers of quantum particles that are not free particles but that interact with each other, the problems are serious enough that no non-trivial interacting relativistic quantum field theory in four spacetime dimensions has yet been rigorously constructed. For weakly coupled particles approximate computations in principle are possible, but these require very careful treatment since a straightforward computation will give infinite results. We will not get into the details of methods for making sense of such calculations ("renormalization theory") in general, but will outline what is known for the Standard Model quantum field theory in later chapters. In this chapter we'll begin by restricting our attention mostly to free field theories and do the non-relativistic case.

Note that changing at this point we will be changing notation for position variables from q to x. In quantum mechanics, position coordinates q get quantized and become an operator Q, whereas in quantum field theory, the position in space plays a different role, parametrizing field operators.

#### 7.1 Oscillators and quantum fields

In quantum mechanics one can deal with multi-particle systems by taking tensor products of the state spaces and operators for the single particle system. If one does this, one finds that one needs to restrict to symmetric tensor products (bosons) or anti-symmetric tensor products (fermions), a procedure that lacks an obvious motivation. In quantum field theory, the use of oscillator methods automatically gives state spaces that are symmetric or antisymmetric tensor products.

We'll first consider the case of the quantum field theory describing nonrelativistic quantum particles moving in one spatial dimension. Recall that solutions of the Schrödinger equation break up into complex one-dimensional spaces of solutions proportional to

$$\psi_p(x,t) = e^{ipx} e^{-i\frac{p^2}{2m}t}$$

describing a particle with momentum p. We can do an oscillator second quantization of this complex one-dimensional space by defining annihilation and creation operators  $a_p, a_p^{\dagger}$  satisfying the commutation relations (here we'll do bosons, could instead use anti-commutators and do fermions)

$$[a_p, a_p^{\dagger}] = 1$$

The number operator  $N_p = a_p^{\dagger} a_p$  will have eigenvalues  $0, 1, 2, \ldots$ , which will be interpreted as the number of quanta of momentum p. The Hamiltonian will be

$$H_p = \frac{p^2}{2m}(N_p + \frac{1}{2})$$

If there were only a finite number of possible momentum values, we could define a quantum theory of an indefinite number of indistinguishable particles with those possible momenta by using a finite number of operators  $a_p, a_p^{\dagger}$  satisfying

$$[a_p, a_{p'}^{\dagger}] = \delta_{p,p'}$$

and a Hamiltonian

$$H = \sum_{p} H_{p}$$

The problem of course is that the space of possible momenta is not a finite set, but is  $\mathbf{R}$ . Physicists deal with this by introducing

• An "infrared cutoff" that makes the set of momenta discrete, also called "putting the system in a box." The idea is to restrict space to a finite interval  $\left[-\frac{L}{2}, \frac{L}{2}\right]$  of size L and choose periodic boundary conditions (or, equivalently, take space to be a circle). The periodicity condition  $e^{ipx} = e^{ip(x+L)}$  then implies that p takes only the discrete values

$$p_j = j \frac{2\pi}{L}$$

labeled by  $j \in \mathbf{Z}$ .

An "ultraviolet cutoff" that makes the set of discrete momenta finite. This
is the choice of some Λ > 0 and restriction of the set of momenta to the
interval [-Λ, Λ].

One then tries to recover the theory with continuous momenta by taking the limits  $L \to \infty$  and  $\Lambda \to \infty$ . Before taking the limit, the theory will just be a harmonic oscillator with a large but finite number of degrees of freedom, and the Stone-von Neumann theorem will apply. Unfortunately one immediately runs into problems when trying to take the limit. In particular, each p will contribute a term  $\frac{1}{2}$  to the energy of the vacuum state, so the vacuum will have infinite energy. This is just the first of various problems that will need to be addressed to get a well-defined limit.

Physicists often define the theory formally, in a notation assuming that the limits can be made sense of, with sums becoming integrals and Kronecker  $\delta_{j,k}$  terms becoming Dirac delta-functions as p becomes a continuous variable in the limit. In this notation, one has operators  $a(p), a(p)^{\dagger}$  for  $p \in \mathbf{R}$  satisfying

$$[a(p), a(p')^{\dagger}] = \delta(p - p')$$

and a Hamiltonian operator

$$H = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{p^2}{2m} (a(p)a(p)^{\dagger} + \frac{1}{2})dp$$

In this notation a quantum field will be the (inverse) Fourier transform of the  $a_p$  operator,

$$\widehat{\psi}(x) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ipx} a(p) dp$$

with adjoint

$$\widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(x) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-ipx} a(p)^{\dagger} dp$$

and these quantum field operators will satisfy the commutation relations

$$[\widehat{\psi}(x),\widehat{\psi}(x')] = [\widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(x),\widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(x')] = 0, \quad [\widehat{\psi}(x),\widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(x')] = \delta(x-x')$$

The physical interpretation of these operators is that  $\hat{\psi}^{\dagger}(x)$  creates an additional quantum, thus a particle, at position x at t = 0, while  $\hat{\psi}(x)$  removes a particle at position x. While the a(p) and  $a(p)^{\dagger}$  operators have a stable physical interpretation (a particle of momentum p at t = 0 will continue to be a particle of momentum p at all later times), this is not true at all if one creates a physical quantum particle at a specific position x' at time t = 0. The initial wave function  $\delta(x - x')$  has constant Fourier transform, so contributions from arbitrarily large momenta p, which will each evolve separately as  $e^{-i\frac{p^2}{2m}t}$ . For arbitrarily short times after t = 0 there will be non-zero probability that the particle is observed arbitrarily far away.

We will make heavy use of the Fourier transform for functions and for distributions. For the spatial variables x the Fourier transform variable will be pand the Fourier and inverse Fourier transforms are

$$\widetilde{f}(p) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-ipx} f(x) dx, \quad f(x) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ipx} \widetilde{f}(p) dp$$

For the time variable there will be an opposite choice of sign

$$\widetilde{f}(E) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{iEt} f(t) dt, \quad f(t) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-iEt} \widetilde{f}(E) dE$$

this convention is motivated by the relativistic case, where the Lorentz-invariant inner product of energy-momentum and time-space vectors has opposite signs for time and space. Under Fourier transformation differentiation becomes multiplication with

$$\frac{\widetilde{\partial f}}{\partial t} = -iE\widetilde{f}, \quad \frac{\widetilde{\partial f}}{\partial x} = ip\widetilde{f}$$

(use integration by parts, assume functions vanishing at  $\pm \infty$ ).

#### 7.2 Quantum fields as operator-valued distributions

In order to have a well-defined notion of a quantum field theory, one needs to take into account that one gets physically sensible results not for states with a definite position or momentum, but for states that are in  $L^2(\mathbf{R})$ . We can rigorously define quantum fields as operator-valued distributions, meaning  $\hat{\psi}(x)$  by itself is not an operator, but there will be a well-defined operator  $\hat{\psi}(f)$  for  $f \in L^2(\mathbf{R})$ , which we'll write as

$$\widehat{\psi}(f) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \widehat{\psi}(x) f(x) dx$$

In this section we'll outline a rigorous construction of the state space of the nonrelativistic quantum field theory, for more details see [5]. This is based on exactly the Fock space construction we explained in the finite-dimensional case for the bosonic and fermionic oscillators. There we used polynomials in generators  $z_j$ or  $\theta_j$ , with creation operators given by multiplication, annihilation operators given by differentiation. Here instead of polynomials we'll use the symmetric and antisymmetric tensor algebras.

Note that in earlier chapters we were starting with a finite-dimensional real phase space M, and choosing an appropriate complex structure J, giving a decomposition  $M \otimes \mathbf{C} = M_J^+ \oplus M_J^-$ . The oscillator state space of the Bargmann-Fock construction would be  $S^*(M_J^+)$  (bosonic) or  $\Lambda^*(M_J^+)$  (fermionic). Here we want to construct oscillator state spaces starting not with a finite-dimensional real phase space M, but with an infinite-dimensional complex space  $\mathcal{H}_1 = L^2(\mathbf{R})$ , the space of initial data for a solution of the Schrödinger equation. We still need to complexify the phase space, but don't need to choose a J. Instead we have

$$\mathcal{H}_1 \otimes \mathbf{C} = \mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \overline{\mathcal{H}}_1$$

where  $\overline{\mathcal{H}}_1$  is  $\mathcal{H}_1$  with the conjugate action of complex scalars.

Given a Hilbert space  $\mathcal{H}_1$  one also gets a Hilbert space structure on the *n*-fold tensor product  $T^n(\mathcal{H}_1)$ . This in turn gives a Hilbert space structure on the entire tensor algebra  $T^*(\mathcal{H}_1)$ , taking as norm-squared the infinite sum of the norm-squareds for each  $T^n$ . Note that another way to represent multi-particle wavefunctions is to use the fact that when one takes tensor products one has

$$L^2(\mathbf{R}) \otimes L^2(\mathbf{R}) = L^2(\mathbf{R}^2)$$

so one could identify  $T^n(\mathcal{H}_1)$  with  $L^2(\mathbf{R}^n)$  (although we will not be using this). On  $T^n(\mathcal{H}_1)$  one has symmetrization and anti-symmetrization operators that project onto  $S^n(\mathcal{H}_1)$  and  $\Lambda^n(\mathcal{H}_1)$ . These are given by

$$\Pi^+(f_1\otimes\cdots\otimes f_n)=\frac{1}{n!}\sum_P(f_{P(1)}\otimes\cdots\otimes f_{P(n)})$$

and

$$\Pi^{-}(f_1 \otimes \cdots \otimes f_n) = \frac{1}{n!} \sum_{P} (sgn(P))(f_{P(1)} \otimes \cdots \otimes f_{P(n)})$$

where P are the elements of the permutation group  $S_n$  and sgn(P) the sign of a permutation.

The action of the field operators will be given by

$$\widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f)\Pi^{\pm}(f_1\otimes\cdots\otimes f_n)=\sqrt{n+1}\Pi^{\pm}(f\otimes f_1\otimes\cdots\otimes f_n)$$

and

$$\widehat{\psi}(f)\Pi^{\pm}(f_1\otimes\cdots\otimes f_n) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\sum_{j=1}^n (f,f_j)\Pi^{\pm}(f_1\otimes\cdots\otimes \widehat{f_j}\otimes\cdots\otimes f_n)$$

Here  $(\cdot, \cdot)$  is the inner product on  $\mathcal{H}_1$ . and the hatted term in the tensor product is omitted. Note that the operator  $\hat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f)$  is complex linear in the complex function f, whereas  $\hat{\psi}(f)$  is complex anti-linear.

These definitions are set up to give us the usual CCR or CAR relations. In our earlier discussion we just wrote those down for the operators corresponding to basis element of the complex vector space  $M_J^+$ , but we could have extended these relations to arbitrary vectors in  $M_J^+$ , which would be what we have here. The relations we get are explicitly (for the bosonic case, for fermions use anticommutators).

$$\begin{split} [\widehat{\psi}(f_1), \widehat{\psi}(f_2)] &= [\widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f_1), \widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f_2)] = 0\\ [\widehat{\psi}(f_1), \widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f_2)] &= (f_1, f_2) \end{split}$$

More effort is needed to define quadratic products of operators such as the Hamiltonian, for details see [5]. Such products will not be defined only on pairs of elements of  $\mathcal{H}_1$  that lie in a dense subspace given by functions f that are in the Schwarz space  $\mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R}) \subset L^2(\mathbf{R})$ .

#### 7.3 Dynamics of quantum fields

Until now we have been studying the dynamics of quantum systems in what physicist's call the "Schrödinger picture", with states in  $\mathcal{H}$  evolving in time, while the interesting operators like Q and P are time-independent. There is an alternative way to proceed, the "Heisenberg picture", in which states are time independent, with time dependence instead in the operators. In quantum field theory the Heisenberg picture is much more convenient, since the set of states is very complicated (functions on an infinite-dimensional spaces), with the set of operators (combinations of field operators) much less so. In addition, in quantum field theory there is a distinguished state, the vacuum state, and one can study other states in terms of the operators that produce the state from the vacuum.

Going back to quantum mechanics, the time dependence of Schrödinger picture states is given by

$$\psi(t) = e^{-iHt}\psi(0)$$

and operator expectation values are give by inner products

$$\langle \psi'(t), O\psi(t) \rangle = \langle \psi'(0), e^{iHt}Oe^{-iHt}\psi(0) \rangle$$

In the Heisenberg picture one treats the state space as time-independent, for instance taking Schrödinger states at t = 0, but operators now become time-dependent, with the Heisenberg time-dependent operator O(t) related to the Schrödinger time-independent operator O by

$$O(t) = e^{iHt}Oe^{-iHt}$$

Differentiating this equation, one finds that Heisenberg picture operators will satisfy the equation

$$\frac{d}{dt}O(t) = [O(t), -iH]$$

which is the quantization of Hamilton's equations of classical mechanics

$$\frac{d}{dt}f = \{f, h\}$$

For annihilation and creation operators with Hamiltonian  $H = \omega a^{\dagger} a$  one has

$$\frac{d}{dt}a(t) = -i\omega a(t), \quad \frac{d}{dt}a^{\dagger}(t) = -i\omega a^{\dagger}(t)$$

$$a(t) = e^{-i\omega t}a, \quad a^{\dagger}(t) = e^{i\omega t}a^{\dagger}$$

$$(7.1)$$

 $\mathbf{SO}$ 

where 
$$a = a(0), a^{\dagger} - a^{\dagger}(0)$$
. In quantum field theory we will have momentum  
space annihilation and creation operators  $a(t, p)$  and  $a^{\dagger}(t, p)$  and position space  
field operators  $\hat{\psi}(t, x)$  and  $\hat{\psi}^{\dagger}(t, x)$ . Note that all of these are operator-valued  
distributions, with actual operators given by  $\hat{\psi}(f)$  for  $f$  in the Schwartz space  
of functions of  $t$  and  $x$ .

For the quantum field theory of free non-relativistic particles, one can use the Heisenberg picture, and take as state space the Fock space  $S^*(\mathcal{H}_1)$  or  $\Lambda^*(\mathcal{H}_1)$  described above. Observables will be time-dependent fields, which are operator-valued distributions  $\widehat{\psi}(t, x)$  satisfying the equation of motion

$$\frac{\partial \widehat{\psi}(t,x)}{\partial t} = i[H,\widehat{\psi}(t,x)]$$

The Hamiltonian is time-independent and for a free particle is given by

$$H = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{p^2}{2m} a^{\dagger}(p) a(p) dp = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(x) \left(-\frac{1}{2m} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2}\right) \widehat{\psi}(x) dx$$

To describe interacting particles, the simplest sort of interaction is a singleparticle interaction with an external potential V(x). This is no longer so simply described using momentum space a(p) and  $a(p)^{\dagger}$  operators since one no longer has translation invariance and particle momentum is no longer conserved. There is a simple description using field operators, with the Hamiltonian now

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(x) \left( -\frac{1}{2m} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} + V(x) \right) \widehat{\psi}(x) dx$$

The field is now an operator-valued distribution satisfying the usual linear Schrödinger equation

$$i\frac{\partial\widehat{\psi}(t,x)}{\partial t} = \left(-\frac{1}{2m}\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} + V(x)\right)\widehat{\psi}(t,x)$$

In momentum space the a(t, p) are no longer decoupled, with the Hamiltonian now

$$H = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{p^2}{2m} a^{\dagger}(p)a(p)dp + \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \widetilde{V}(q)a^{\dagger}(p+q)a(p)dpdq$$

The second term has a physical interpretation as causing a change in momentum of a particle by momentum q, with amplitude proportional to the q Fourier component of the potential. One can also easily write down the non-relativistic field theory Hamiltonian for charged particles coupled to a background electromagnetic vector potential by changing derivatives to covariant derivatives (see equation 6.1. Using a two component version of  $\mathcal{H}_1$ , one can also write down the field theory version of the Pauli-Schrödinger equation, describing spin  $\frac{1}{2}$ particles coupled to an electromagnetic field.

The non-relativistic quantum field theory formalism can also describe particles that can interact not just with a potential but with each other. In the case where particles interact pairwise the Hamiltonian gets an added term

$$\frac{1}{2}\int_{-\infty}^{\infty}\int_{-\infty}^{\infty}\widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(x)\widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(y)v(x-y)\widehat{\psi}(x)\widehat{\psi}(y)dxdy$$

Here v(x - y) is the interaction potential energy between the particles. As an example, for the Coulomb interaction this would be

$$v(x-y) = -\frac{e^2}{|x-y|}$$

By doing this, the Hamiltonian is no longer quadratic in the fields and the equation of motion of the operators is now non-linear. This introduces serious new difficulties, one of which is that of how to make any sense of a product of four operator valued distributions.

Note that the formalism we have discussed here applies equally well to bosonic and fermionc cases, with the only difference the use of symmetric versus anti-symmetric tensor product spaces and commutators versus anti-commutators.

#### 7.4 Anti-particles

We have been discussing non-relativistic quantum field theory as a second quantization of the phase space  $\mathcal{H}_1$  of solutions of the Schrödinger equation by oscillator methods.  $\mathcal{H}_1$  is complex, so comes with a complex structure J = i that one can use to do Bargmann-Fock quantization. One could however have chosen the opposite complex structure, J = -i, or equivalently choose to quantize the space  $\overline{\mathcal{H}}_1$  of complex conjugates  $\overline{\psi}$  of solutions to the Schrödinger equation, which are solutions to the equation

$$-i\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\overline{\psi} = \frac{1}{2m}P^2\overline{\psi}$$

We'll denote the annihilation and creation operators used to do this by  $b(p), b^{\dagger}(p)$ , satisfying the same (anti)-commutation relations as the  $a(p), a^{\dagger}(p)$ . We can define a new set of field operators, which for free particles will be given by

$$\widehat{\overline{\psi}}(t,x) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ipx} e^{-i\frac{p^2}{2m}t} b(p)^{\dagger} dp$$

This operator and its adjoint will have the physical interpretation of creating and annihilating an "anti-particle" of the particle corresponding to  $\hat{\psi}$ . One can interpret such particles as moving backwards in time with negative energy (and negative the usual momentum). The usual particles we have been discussing are said to have "charge +1", which both describes their behavior under U(1)phase transformations and their coupling to electromagnetism (to be discussed in chapter 15). Anti-particles will instead have charge -1. In the relativistic theory, there will unavoidably be both particles and anti-particles, but in the non-relativistic limit they decouple, so we can just consider particles and ignore the anti-particles.

#### 7.5 The propagator

In the Heisenberg picture, one can use the existence of a distinguished vacuum state  $|0\rangle \in \mathcal{H}$ , with the other states in  $\mathcal{H}$  given by applying linear combinations of sums of field operators of the form  $\hat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f)$ . What we need to calculate are the distributions

$$\langle 0 | O_1(t_1, x_1) O_2(t_2, x_2) \cdots O_n(t_n, x_n) | 0 \rangle$$

depending on n values of t and x, where the operator  $O_j$  can be  $\hat{\psi}$  or  $\hat{\psi}^{\dagger}$ . These are known as "Wightman *n*-point functions", although they are distributions, not functions. For the case of the free particle, one only gets a non-zero result by pairing one of the  $\hat{\psi}$  and one of the  $\hat{\psi}^{\dagger}$ , with the result factorizing into contributions from each possible pairing. We won't here explain the details of this, but just note that one just needs to compute the 2-point function

$$W(t, t', x, x') = \langle 0 | \widehat{\psi}(t, x) \widehat{\psi}(t', x') | 0 \rangle$$

Furthermore, this will only depend on t - t' and x - x', since one can translate field operators in time and space using the Hamiltonian and momentum operators by

$$\widehat{\psi}(t+a,x) = e^{iaH}\widehat{\psi}(t,x)e^{-iaH}, \quad \widehat{\psi}(t,x+b) = e^{ibP}\widehat{\psi}(t,x)e^{-ibP}$$

and use

$$P\left|0\right\rangle = 0 = H\left|0\right\rangle$$

We thus just need to calculate

$$W(t,x) = \langle 0 | \widehat{\psi}(t,x) \widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(0,0) | 0 \rangle$$

The field operators are Fourier transforms of the momentum space operators  $a(t, p), a^{\dagger}(t, p)$  which have time dependence given by 7.1. So

$$W(t,x) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ipx} e^{-i\frac{p^2}{2m}t} \langle 0| \, a(p) a^{\dagger}(p') \, |0\rangle \, dp dp'$$

Using

$$[a(p), a^{\dagger}(p')] = \delta(p - p')$$

this becomes

$$W(t,x) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ipx} e^{-i\frac{p^2}{2m}t} dp$$

Note that this is just the inverse Fourier transform of

$$\widetilde{W}(t,p) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} e^{-i\frac{p^2}{2m}t}$$

One could also Fourier transform in t, with Fourier transform variable E, and find that

$$\widetilde{W}(E,p) = \delta(E - \frac{p^2}{2m})$$
(7.2)

To work with this distribution, one can define it as a boundary value of a holomorphic function by looking at complex values of t, defining  $z = \tau + it$ . Then

$$W(z,x) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ipx} e^{-\frac{p^2}{2m}z} dp$$

This integral is well-defined if  $\tau > 0$  and then is holomorphic in the  $\tau > 0$  half-plane. In this half-plane one can evaluate the integral by completing the square and getting a Gaussian integral, by shifting p by  $i\sqrt{\frac{m}{z}}x$  with the result

$$W(z,x) = \sqrt{\frac{m}{2\pi z}} e^{-\frac{m}{2z}x^2}$$

The distribution W(t, x) is then defined as

$$W(t,x) = \lim_{\tau \to 0^+} \sqrt{\frac{m}{2\pi(\tau + it)}} e^{-\frac{m}{2(\tau + it)}x^2}$$

Note that the choice of square root here is determined by the analytic continuation from the result on the  $\tau > 0$  real z axis.

#### 7.6 Euclidean quantum field theory

The calculation of the propagator in the last section makes it tempting to try and define the quantum field theory for complex values of time, getting operators

$$\psi(z,x) = e^{zH}\psi(0,x)e^{-zH}$$

that would be holomorphic in z for  $\tau > 0$ . This however cannot work for very general reasons. For any sensible theory with a stable lowest energy state, the Hamiltonian is supposed to have a spectrum bounded below that goes off to  $+\infty$ , and for  $\tau > 0$  this will make  $e^{zH}$  ill-defined. What does make sense though are expectation values of operators of the form

$$\langle 0 | O(z_1, x_1) O(z_2, x_2), \cdots O(z_n, x_n) | 0 \rangle$$

where successive  $z_j$  satisfy  $\operatorname{Re}(z_j) > \operatorname{Re}(z_{j+1})$  (since, translating to z = 0, there will be factors  $e^{-(z_j-z_{j+1})H}$  between the operators). An example of this is the propagator of the previous section, which only makes sense for  $\tau > 0$ .

In Euclidean quantum field theory (the origin of the name will become clear when we study the relativistic case), one defines the theory by defining *n*-point functions for real values of  $z_j$  (equivalently, for imaginary values of time). Analytic continuation to real values of time (imaginary values of z) will give Wightman distributions with properties needed to define a quantum field theory. These imaginary time *n*-point functions are called "Schwinger functions" and they are actual functions (not distributions) away from coinciding points. In particular, the Schwinger twi-point function for the non-relativistic free particle theory will be

$$S(\tau, x) = \sqrt{\frac{m}{2\pi\tau}} e^{-\frac{m}{2\tau}x^2}$$

and only defined for  $\tau > 0$ .

This Schwinger function is well-known in mathematics as the "heat kernel", and it is appearing because the Schrödinger equation for imaginary time

$$(\frac{\partial}{\partial \tau} - \frac{1}{2m} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2})\psi(\tau, x) = 0$$

is just the heat equation (for the choice of constant  $\frac{1}{2m}$ ). One normally looks for real-valued solutions, but can also consider complex-valued solutions, which will just be pairs of real-valued solutions. A standard problem one solves for the heat equation is to find  $\psi(\tau, x)$  given initial data  $\psi(0, x)$ . This can be done only for  $\tau > 0$ . Unlike the Schrödinger equation case, initial data can be propagated in one direction only.

The heat kernel is the kernel of the transformation taking initial data to solutions at later times:

$$\psi(\tau, x) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} S(\tau, x - x')\psi(0, x')dx'$$
(7.3)

It has remarkable properties, in particular the way it smooths solutions, with initial data a distribution in  $S'(\mathbf{R})$  propagating to a  $C^{\infty}$  function for arbitrarily small  $\tau$ . Physically, it describes the diffusion of heat in a homogeneous material, and also models the way probability diffuses in a random walk. Note that the way probability appears is very different than in the Schrödinger equation case. In the random walk case the probability density at x is  $\psi(x)$  and is real, whereas in the Schrödinger equation case  $\psi$  is complex and the probability density is  $|\psi(x)|^2$ .

#### 7.7 Propagators and Green's functions

In the real time quantum field theory, field operators satisfy an equation of motion such as the Schrödinger equation, but in imaginary time there are not well-defined operators satisfying an equation of motion. Using the propagation equation 7.3 one can see that the Schwinger functions however do satisfy the imaginary time equation of motion for  $\tau > 0$  (since the  $\psi(\tau, x)$  do). They also must satisfy the distributional boundary condition  $S(0, x - x') = \delta(x - x')$  and can be defined as 0 for  $\tau < 0$ . Shifting the x coordinate by x', the Schwinger function will satisfy

$$(\frac{\partial}{\partial \tau} - \frac{1}{2m} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2}) S(\tau, x) = \delta(\tau) \delta(x)$$

Fourier transforming in  $\tau$  and p, this equation becomes

$$(-iE + \frac{p^2}{2m})\widetilde{S}(E,p) = \frac{1}{2\pi}$$

 $\mathbf{SO}$ 

$$\widetilde{S}(E,p) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \left( \frac{1}{-iE + \frac{p^2}{2m}} \right) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \left( \frac{i}{E + i\frac{p^2}{2m}} \right)$$

The Schwinger function is thus the inverse of the heat equation differential operator, so an example of a "Green's function". Note that  $\tilde{S}(E, p)$  is holomorphic in the complex *E*-plane, except for a simple pole at  $E = -i \frac{p^2}{2m}$  with residue one. Evaluating the integral

$$\widetilde{S}(\tau,p) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-iE\tau} \frac{1}{2\pi} \left(\frac{i}{E+i\frac{p^2}{2m}}\right) dE$$

along the real E axis, one can close the contour in the upper half E plane for  $\tau < 0$  and in the lower half E plane for  $\tau > 0$ . Using the residue formula one gets

$$\widetilde{S}(\tau, p) = \begin{cases} \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} e^{-\frac{p^2}{2m}\tau} & \tau > 0\\ 0 & \tau < 0 \end{cases}$$



In real time, it is the Wightman function W(t, x) that gives the kernel for propagation in time t according to the Schrödinger equation. Defining (here  $\theta(t)$  is the Heaviside function)

$$W_+(t,x) = \theta(t)W(t,x)$$

to get propagation just in the positive t direction, by the same calculation as above except for the Schrödinger rather than heat equation one gets

$$\widetilde{W}_{+}(E,p) = \frac{i}{2\pi} \frac{1}{E - \frac{p^2}{2m}}$$
(7.4)

Taking an inverse Fourier transform gives

$$\widetilde{W}_{+}(t,p) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-iEt} \frac{i}{2\pi} \frac{1}{E - \frac{p^2}{2m}} dE$$

This integral is however ill-defined in the absence of any indication of how one should treat integration through the pole at  $E = \frac{p^2}{2m}$ . The origin of the problem is that one is trying to invert an operator that has a kernel, so the inverse is ill-defined. One needs to impose some boundary conditions to remove the kernel. Going to imaginary time also resolves the problem.

It turns out that one can get a sensible result if one shifts the position of the pole by an infinitesimal negative imaginary amount  $-\epsilon$  (or, equivalently, moves

the contour into the upper half plane by a positive amount  $\epsilon$ . Then  $\widetilde{W}_+(t,p)$  is the limit as  $\epsilon \to 0^+$  of

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \frac{i}{2\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-iEt} \frac{1}{E - \frac{p^2}{2m} + i\epsilon} dE = \begin{cases} 0 & t < 0\\ \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} e^{-i(\frac{p^2}{2m} - i\epsilon)t} & t > 0 \end{cases}$$

One gets this result from Cauchy's integral formula since, for t < 0 one can close the contour in the upper half-plane (which doesn't include the pole), and for t > 0 close in the lower half-plane, which does. The propagator is then

$$W_{+}(t,x) = \lim_{\epsilon \to 0^{+}} \theta(t) \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ipx} e^{-i(\frac{p^{2}}{2m} - i\epsilon)t} dp$$

To get progagation to negative t, one just needs to switch the Heaviside function and the sign of  $\epsilon$ 

$$W_{-}(t,x) = \lim_{\epsilon \to 0^{-}} \theta(t) \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{ipx} e^{-i(\frac{p^{2}}{2m} - i\epsilon)t} dp$$

Adding together  $W_+$  and  $W_-$  gives the earlier result that W is a delta-function, since the integrals in the sum cancel except one goes above the pole, the other below, with the integral around the pole the delta-function.



#### 7.8 On and off mass-shell quantum fields

Non-relativistic quantum field theory has a state space  $\mathcal{H} = S^*(\mathcal{H}_1)$  or  $\Lambda^*(\mathcal{H}_1)$ , where  $\mathcal{H}_1$  is the single particle state space of solutions to the Schrödinger equation. The Schrödinger picture field operators  $\hat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f)$  of section 7.2 for  $f \in \mathcal{H}_1$ act by increasing the number of particles by one, their adjoints  $\hat{\psi}(f)$  reduce the number by one. These satisfy commutation relations

$$[\widehat{\psi}(f_1), \widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f_2)] = (f_1, f_2)$$

and

$$\langle 0 | \, \widehat{\psi}(f_1) \widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f_2) \, | 0 \rangle = (f_1, f_2)$$

More explicitly, the space  $\mathcal{H}_1$  can be identified with initial data at t = 0 for a solution, which will be either  $\psi(0, x) \in L^2(\mathbf{R})$  or the Fourier transform  $\widetilde{\psi}(0, p) \in L^2(\mathbf{R})$ . The Wightman function at t = 0 is the delta-function distribution  $W(0, x) = \delta(x)$ .

Heisenberg picture time dependent quantum fields are again operator-valued distributions, but now depend on t as well as x, so operators are given by  $\hat{\psi}(f), \hat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f)$ , where f is a function of two variables. Fourier transforming,  $\tilde{f}$  is a function of E and p. The Fourier transformed Wightman function  $\widetilde{W}(E, p)$  is the distribution  $\delta(E - \frac{p^2}{2m})$  and one has

$$\langle 0 | \widehat{\psi}(f_1) \widehat{\psi}^{\dagger}(f_2) | 0 \rangle = (f_1, f_2)$$

where

$$(f_1, f_2) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \overline{\widetilde{f_1}}(E, p) \delta\left(E - \frac{p^2}{2m}\right) \widetilde{f_2}(E, p) dEdp$$

 $\mathcal{H}_1$  now has a description as functions on the parabola  $E = \frac{p^2}{2m}$ .

While we have been writing down formulas just for one spatial dimension, the extension to the case of three dimensions is straightforward, with position and momentum x, p now 3-vectors  $\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{p}$ . The Wightman function in energymomentum space will be

$$\widetilde{W}(E,\mathbf{p}) = \delta\left(E - \frac{|\mathbf{p}|^2}{2m}\right)$$

The locus  $E = \frac{|\mathbf{p}|^2}{2m}$  is sometimes called the "mass-shell", for reasons that will become clear in the relativistic case.

#### 7.9 For further reading

For a more detailed rigorous version of the Fock space construction discussed here, see chapter 5 of [5]. For a physics text that covers clearly this material, see chapter 6 of [9].

## Chapter 8

# Quantization of infinite dimensional phase spaces

For quantum field theories such as the non-relativistic quantum field theory of the previous section, one is quantizing an infinite-dimensional phase space such as the space of solutions to the free-particle Schrödinger equation and the Stone-von Neumann theorem and its analog for Clifford algebras no longer hold. One no longer has a unique (up to unitary equivalence) representation of the canonical commutation (or anticommutation) relations. For a restricted sort of infinite dimensional symplectic or orthogonal group one does one recover the Stone-von Neumann uniqueness of the finite dimensional case, but new phenomena appear. The arbitrary constants found in the definition of the moment map now cannot be ignored, but may appear in commutation relations, leading to something called an "anomaly".

#### 8.1 Inequivalent irreducible representations

In our discussion of quantization, an important part of this story was the Stonevon Neumann theorem, which says that the Heisenberg group has only one interesting irreducible representation, up to unitary equivalence (the Schrödinger representation). In infinite dimensions, this is no longer true: there will be an infinite number of inequivalent irreducible representations, with no known complete classification of the possibilities. Before one can even begin to compute things like expectation values of observables, one needs to find an appropriate choice of representation, adding a new layer of difficulty to the problem that goes beyond that of just increasing the number of degrees of freedom.

One example of this phenomenon can be constructed by considering changes in the complex structure J used to define the Bargmann-Fock construction of the representation. For finite d, representations defined using  $|0\rangle_J$  for different complex structures are all unitarily equivalent, but this can fail in the limit as dgoes to infinity. In both the standard oscillator case with  $Sp(2d, \mathbf{R})$  acting, and the fermionic oscillator case with  $SO(2d, \mathbf{R})$  acting, we found that there were "Bogoliubov transformations": elements of the group not in the U(d) subgroup distinguished by the choice of J, which acted non-trivially on  $|0\rangle_J$ , taking it to a different state. Such action by Bogoliubov transformations can, in the limit of  $d \to \infty$ , take  $|0\rangle$  to an orthogonal state. This introduces the possibility of inequivalent representations of the commutation relations, built by applying operators to orthogonal ground states. The physical interpretation is that such states correspond to condensates of quanta. For the usual bosonic oscillator case, this phenomenon occurs in the theory of superfluidity, for fermionic oscillators it occurs in the theory of superconductivity. It was in the study of such systems that Bogoliubov discovered the transformations that now bear his name.

#### 8.2 The restricted symplectic group

If one restricts the class of complex structures J to ones not that different from the standard one  $J_0$ , then one can recover a version of the Stone-von Neumann theorem and have much the same behavior as in the finite dimensional case. Note that for each invertible linear map g on phase space, g acts on the complex structure (see equation ??), taking  $J_0$  to a complex structure we'll call  $J_g$ . One can define subgroups of the infinite dimensional symplectic or orthogonal groups as follows:

**Definition** (Restricted symplectic and orthogonal groups). The group of linear transformations g of an infinite dimensional symplectic vector space preserving the symplectic structure and also satisfying the condition

$$tr(A^{\dagger}A) < \infty$$

on the operator

$$A = [J_g, J_0]$$

is called the restricted symplectic group and denoted  $Sp_{res}$ . The group of linear transformations g of an infinite dimensional inner-product space preserving the inner-product and satisfying the same condition as above on  $[J_g, J_0]$  is called the restricted orthogonal group and denoted  $SO_{res}$ .

An operator A satisfying  $tr(A^{\dagger}A) < \infty$  is said to be a Hilbert-Schmidt operator. One then has the following replacement for the Stone-von Neumann theorem:

**Theorem.** Given two complex structures  $J_1, J_2$  on a Hilbert space such that  $[J_1, J_2]$  is Hilbert-Schmidt, acting on the states

$$|0\rangle_{J_1}, |0\rangle_{J_2}$$

by annihilation and creation operators will give unitarily equivalent representations of the Weyl algebra (in the bosonic case), or the Clifford algebra (in the fermionic case). The standard reference for the proof of this statement is the original papers of Shale [24] and Shale-Stinespring [25]. A detailed discussion of the theorem can be found in [18].

For some motivation for this theorem, not that elements of  $\mathfrak{sp}(2d, \mathbf{R})$  corresponding to Bogoliubov transformations (i.e., with non-zero commutator with  $J_0$ ) act on the metaplectic representation by

$$-\frac{i}{2}\sum_{jk}(B_{jk}a_j^{\dagger}a_k^{\dagger} + \overline{B}_{jk}a_ja_k)$$
(8.1)

for a complex symmetric d by d matrix B. Commuting two of these (for matrices B and C) gives

$$\sum_{jk} (B\overline{C} - C\overline{B})_{jk} a_j^{\dagger} a_k + \frac{1}{2} (B\overline{C} - C\overline{B}) \mathbf{1}$$

For  $d = \infty$ , this trace in general will be infinite and undefined. An alternate characterization of Hilbert-Schmidt operators is that for B and C Hilbert-Schmidt operators, the traces

$$tr(BC^{\dagger})$$
 and  $tr(CB^{\dagger})$ 

will be finite and well-defined. So, at least to the extent normal ordered operators quadratic in annihilation and creation operators are well-defined, the Hilbert-Schmidt condition on operators not commuting with the complex structure implies that they will have well-defined commutation relations with each other.

#### 8.3 The anomaly and the Schwinger term

The argument above gives some motivation for the existence as d goes to  $\infty$  of well-defined commutators of operators of the form 8.1 and thus for the existence of an analog of the metaplectic representation for the infinite dimensional Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{sp}_{res}$  of  $Sp_{res}$ . There is one obvious problem though with this argument, in that while it tells us that normal ordered operators will have well-defined commutation relations, they are not quite the right commutation relations, due to the occurrence of the extra scalar term

$$\frac{1}{2}tr(BC^{\dagger}-CB^{\dagger})\mathbf{1}$$

This term is sometimes called the "Schwinger term".

The Schwinger term causes a problem with the standard expectation that given some group G acting on the phase space preserving the Poisson bracket, one should get a unitary representation of G on the quantum state space  $\mathcal{H}$ . This problem is sometimes called the "anomaly", meaning that the expected unitary Lie algebra representation does not exist (due to extra scalar terms in the commutation relations). This potential problem was already visible at the classical level, in the fact that given  $L \in \mathfrak{g}$ , the corresponding moment map  $\mu_L$  is only well-defined up to a constant. While for the finite dimensional cases we studied, the constants could be chosen so as to make the map

 $L \rightarrow \mu_L$ 

a Lie algebra homomorphism, that turns out to no longer be true for the case  $\mathfrak{g} = \mathfrak{sp}_{res}$  (or  $\mathfrak{so}_{res}$ ) acting on an infinite dimensional phase space. The potential problem of the anomaly is thus already visible classically, but it is only when one constructs the quantum theory and thus a representation on the state space that one can see whether the problem cannot be removed by a constant shift in the representation operators. This situation, despite its classical origin, is sometimes characterized as a form of symmetry-breaking due to the quantization procedure. The anomaly is an inherently infinite dimensional problem since it is only then that infinite shifts are necessary. When the anomaly does appear, it will appear as a phase-ambiguity in the group representation operators (not just a sign ambiguity as in finite dimensional case of  $Sp(2d, \mathbf{R})$ ), and  $\mathcal{H}$  will be a projective representation of the group (a representation up to phase).

#### 8.4 Spontaneous symmetry breaking

In the standard Bargmann-Fock construction, there is a unique state  $|0\rangle$ , and for the Hamiltonian of the free particle quantum field theory, this will be the lowest energy state. In interacting quantum field theories, one may have state spaces unitarily inequivalent to the standard Bargmann-Fock one. These can have their own annihilation and creation operators, and thus a notion of particle number and a particle number operator  $\hat{N}$ , but the lowest energy  $|0\rangle$  may not have the properties

$$\widehat{N} |0\rangle = 0, \ e^{-i\theta \widehat{N}} |0\rangle = |0\rangle$$

Instead the state  $|0\rangle$  gets taken by  $e^{-i\theta \hat{N}}$  to some other state, with

$$\widehat{N} |0\rangle \neq 0, \ e^{-i\theta \widehat{N}} |0\rangle \equiv |\theta\rangle \neq |0\rangle \quad (\text{for } \theta \neq 0)$$

and the vacuum state not an eigenstate of  $\hat{N}$ , so it does not have a well-defined particle number. If  $[\hat{N}, \hat{H}] = 0$ , the states  $|\theta\rangle$  will all have the same energy as  $|0\rangle$  and there will be a multiplicity of different vacuum states, labeled by  $\theta$ . In such a case the U(1) symmetry is said to be "spontaneously broken". This phenomenon occurs when non-relativistic quantum field theory is used to describe a superconductor. There the lowest energy state will be a state without a definite particle number, with electrons pairing up in a way that allows them to lower their energy, "condensing" in the lowest energy state.

When, as for the multi-component free particle, the Hamiltonian is invariant under U(n) transformations of the fields  $\psi_i$ , then we will have

$$[\widehat{X},\widehat{H}] = 0$$

for  $\widehat{X}$  the operator giving the Lie algebra representation of U(n) on the multiparticle state space. In this case, if  $|0\rangle$  is invariant under the U(n) symmetry, then energy eigenstates of the quantum field theory will break up into irreducible representations of U(n) and can be labeled accordingly. As in the U(1) case, the U(n) symmetry may be spontaneously broken, with

$$\widehat{X}|0\rangle \neq 0$$

for some directions X in  $\mathfrak{u}(n)$ . When this happens, just as in the U(1) case states did not have well-defined particle number, now they will not carry well-defined irreducible U(n) representation labels.

#### 8.5 For further reading

Berezin's The Method of Second Quantization [1] develops in detail the infinite dimensional version of the Bargmann-Fock construction, both in the bosonic and fermionic cases. Infinite dimensional versions of the metaplectic and spinor representations are given there in terms of operators defined by integral kernels. For a discussion of the infinite dimensional Weyl and Clifford algebras, together with a realization of their automorphism groups  $Sp_{res}$  and  $O_{res}$  (and the corresponding Lie algebras) in terms of annihilation and creation operators acting on the infinite dimensional metaplectic and spinor representations, see [18]. The book [22] contains an extensive discussion of the groups  $Sp_{res}$  and  $O_{res}$  and the infinite dimensional version of their metaplectic and spinor representations. It emphasizes the or igin of novel infinite dimensional phenomena in the geometry of the complex structures used in infinite dimensional examples.

The use of Bogoliubov transformations in the theories of superfluidity and superconductivity is a standard topic in quantum field theory textbooks that emphasize condensed matter applications, see for example [14]. The book [4] discusses in detail the occurrence of inequivalent representations of the commutation relations in various physical systems.

For a discussion of "Haag's theorem", which can be interpreted as showing that to describe an interacting quantum field theory, one must use a representation of the canonical commutation relations inequivalent to the one for free field theory, see [6].

### Chapter 9

# Gaussian integrals and path integral quantization

In this chapter we'll discuss the path integral formalism for the non-relativistic quantum field theory described in chapter 7. These are formal objects involving an ill-defined notion of integration over and infinite dimensional space. We'll begin with the finite-dimensional version of the story, which is well-defined and both of significant interest in other fields. The application to quantum field theory will proceed by trying to make sense of the infinite-dimensional analogs of the well-defined finite-dimensional calculations.

#### 9.1 Gaussian integrals

For free field theories the path integral will be an infinite-dimensional version of a Gaussian integral. In this section we'll study the finite-dimensional version, following the discussion in chapter 1 of [32], where one can find a more detailed and comprehensive version of the material here.

Recall that one has (for a > 0)

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\frac{a}{2}x^2} dx = a^{-\frac{1}{2}}$$

and (for any b) by completing the square

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\frac{a}{2}x^2 + bx} dx = a^{-\frac{1}{2}} e^{\frac{b^2}{2a}}$$

For multiple variables, the first of these generalizes to (**A** is a complex symmetric matrix with entries  $A_{jk}$ ).

$$Z(\mathbf{A}) \equiv \int_{\mathbf{R}^n} e^{-\sum_{j,k=1}^n \frac{1}{2}x_j A_{jk} x_k} \frac{d^n x}{(2\pi)^{\frac{n}{2}}} = (\det \mathbf{A})^{-\frac{1}{2}}$$

when  $\mathbf{A}$  has no zero eigenvalues and the real part of  $\mathbf{A}$  is non-negative. More generally

$$Z(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{J}) \equiv \int_{\mathbf{R}^n} e^{-\sum_{j,k=1}^n \frac{1}{2}x_j A_{jk} x_k - \sum_{j=1}^n J_j x_j} \frac{d^n x}{(2\pi)^{\frac{n}{2}}} = (\det \mathbf{A})^{-\frac{1}{2}} e^{\sum_{j,k=1}^n J_j \Delta_{jk} J_k}$$

where  $\Delta_{jk}$  are the matrix elements of the inverse matrix of A. One can compute moments of Gaussian integrals by taking derivatives of  $Z(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{b})$ . Normalizing the moments by defining

$$\langle x_{l_1} \cdots x_{l_m} \rangle \equiv = Z(\mathbf{A})^{-1} \int_{\mathbf{R}^n} (x_{l_1} \cdots x_{l_m}) e^{-\sum_{j,k=1}^n \frac{1}{2} x_j A_{jk} x_k} \frac{d^n x}{(2\pi)^n}$$

one finds

$$\langle x_{l_1}\cdots x_{l_m}\rangle = \frac{\partial}{\partial J_{l_1}}\cdots \frac{\partial}{\partial J_{l_m}} \left(e^{\sum_{j,k=1}^n J_j \Delta_{jk} J_k}\right)_{|\mathbf{J}=0}$$

Non-zero contributions to the result will arise when there are paired derivatives (to get something possibly non-zero at  $\mathbf{b} = 0$ ). One gets (this is known as "Wick's theorem")

$$\langle x_{j_1}\cdots x_{j_m}\rangle = \sum_P \langle x_{k_1}x_{k_2}\rangle\cdots\langle x_{k_{m-1}}x_{k_m}\rangle$$

Where the sum is over all ways to group the indices  $j_1, \dots, j_m$  into pairs

$$(k_1,k_2),\cdots(k_{m-1},k_m)$$

The calculation of these moments thus reduces to sums of products of

$$\langle x_j x_k \rangle = \Delta_{jk}$$

#### 9.2 Perturbation theory

To calculate non-Gaussian integrals where the exponent is no longer quadratic, but instead of the form

$$e^{-\sum_{j,k=1}^{n} \frac{1}{2} x_j A_{jk} x_k + \lambda V(x_1,...,x_n)}$$

where V is a higher order polynomial, one can expand the exponential in powers of  $\lambda$ 

$$e^{-\sum_{j,k=1}^{n} \frac{1}{2} x_j A_{jk} x_k} (1 + \lambda V(x_1, \dots, x_n) + \frac{1}{2!} V(x_1, \dots, x_n)^2 + \cdots$$

This gives a calculation of moments

$$\langle x_{l_1}\cdots x_{l_m}\rangle_\lambda$$

with respect to the non-Gaussian exponential factor as power series in  $\lambda$  about  $\lambda = 0$ . This is called the perturbation series in  $\lambda$  for the moment. There are

various ways to organize such calculations which we will not discuss here, but will just give the result for the case

$$V(x_1, \dots, x_n) = \frac{1}{4!} (x_1^4 + \dots + x_n^4)$$

One finds for the two-point function

$$\langle x_{j_1} x_{j_2} \rangle_{\lambda} = \Delta_{j_1 j_2} - \frac{1}{2} \lambda \sum_{j} \Delta_{j j_1} \Delta_{j j_2} \Delta_{j j_2} + \lambda^2 \sum_{j,k} \left( \frac{1}{4} \Delta_{j_1 j} \Delta_{k j_2} \Delta_{j k} \Delta_{j j} \Delta_{k k} + \frac{1}{4} \Delta_{j j_1} \Delta_{j j_2} \Delta_{j k}^2 \Delta_{k k} + \frac{1}{6} \Delta_{j_1 j} \Delta_{k j_2} \Delta_{j k}^3 \right) + O(\lambda^3)$$

To keep track of the terms in such computations, one associates a diagram ("Feynman diagram) to each term. In these diagrams, each  $\Delta_{jk}$  factor corresponds to a line with ends labeled by j, k. When V is a monomial of degree l these lines are connected together at l-valent vertices, and the sum has a factor of  $\lambda$  for each vertex. The graphs for the calculation of the two-point function above are

$$O(1)$$
  $\overline{j_1}$   $j_2$ 



Continuing with this example, the four-point functions  $\langle x_{j_1}x_{j_2}x_{j_3}x_{j_4}\rangle_{\lambda}$  will have contributions

$$\langle x_{j_1}x_{j_2}\rangle_{\lambda}\langle x_{j_3}x_{j_4}\rangle_{\lambda} + \langle x_{j_1}x_{j_3}\rangle_{\lambda}\langle x_{j_2}x_{j_4}\rangle_{\lambda} + \langle x_{j_1}x_{j_4}\rangle_{\lambda}\langle x_{j_3}x_{j_2}\rangle_{\lambda}$$

corresponding to disconnected graphs, but also contributions corresponding to these connected graphs:



For the details of this, see section 1.4 of [32].

#### 9.3 Complex and fermionic cases

So far we have just dealt with integrals over real variables  $x_j$  (even if the matrix **A** was complex), but one can easily extend the above to work with complex variables  $z_j$  and Gaussian integrals of the form

$$Z_{\mathbf{C}}(\mathbf{A}) \equiv \int_{\mathbf{C}^n} \left( \prod_{j=1}^n \frac{dz_j d\overline{z}_j}{2\pi i} \right) e^{-\sum_{j,k=1}^n \overline{z}_j A_{jk} z_k} = (\det \mathbf{A})^{-1}$$

and

$$Z_{\mathbf{C}}(\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{J}, \mathbf{J}') \equiv \int_{\mathbf{C}^n} \left( \prod_{j=1}^n \frac{dz_j d\overline{z}_j}{2\pi i} \right) e^{-\sum_{j,k=1}^n \overline{z}_j A_{jk} z_k + \sum_{j=1}^n (J_j z_j + J'_j \overline{z}_j)}$$
$$= (\det \mathbf{A})^{-1} e^{\sum_{j,k=1}^n J'_j \Delta_{jk} J_k}$$

As in the real case, moments can be calculated by taking derivatives with respect to  $J_j$  and  $J'_j$ , and used to get the terms in a perturbation expansion for some polynomial V in the  $z_j, \overline{z}_j$ . Wick's theorem will now involve two-point functions with one z and one  $\overline{z}$ , and the graphical expression will use directed lines (with an arrow) to keep track of which is the z and which is the  $\overline{z}$ .

We saw in section 5.1 that one could describe fermionic systems in terms of anti-commuting variables (labeled  $\xi_j$  in the real case,  $\theta_j, \overline{\theta}_j$  in the complex case), and that there was an analog of integration and differentiation using these variables. One can rewrite all the formulas for Gaussians, moments, etc. developed above in this case, and there are only a few changes in the formalism. Besides various signs to keep track of, while in the bosonic case the Gaussian integration over  $z_j, \overline{z}_j$  gives a factor of  $(\det \mathbf{A})^{-1}$ , in the fermionic case one gets det  $\mathbf{A}$ .

For more details, see sections 6.1 and 7.4 of [32].

#### 9.4 The path integral for non-relativistic quantum field theory

The non-relativistic quantum field theory based on the Schrödinger equation that we developed in chapter 7 only depended on the Wightman or Schwinger functions, and for the free field theory we saw that these could be computed in terms of the propagator, which for the Wightman functions is the inverse of the Schrödinger operator. The moments calculated using Gaussian integrals also just depend on the inverse of a linear operator, the matrix  $\mathbf{A}$ . If we formally calculate moments of a Gaussian integral over the infinite-dimensional complex vector space of complex-valued, time-dependent wave functions, with the Gaussian factor defined by the Schrödinger operator, we get the inverse of the Schrödinger operatorWightman functions of the free quantum field theory

We can formally define

$$Z = \int \prod_{(t,\mathbf{x})} \left( \frac{d\psi(t,\mathbf{x})d\overline{\psi}(t,x)}{2\pi i} \right) e^{\int_{\mathbf{R}^4} \overline{\psi}(t,x) \left(i\frac{\partial}{\partial t} + \frac{1}{2m} \nabla^2\right) \psi(t,x) dt d^3 \mathbf{x}}$$

as the determinant of the Schrödinger operator  $\left(i\frac{\partial}{\partial t} + \frac{1}{2m}\nabla^2\right)$ , but this operator has an infinite number of zero eigenvalues (for each solution to the Schrödinger equation). One can try and define the two-point function as the inverse of the Schrödinger operator (see 7.4), but then one has the problem of how to handle the kernel of this operator (the solutions), and this was reflected in the problem of how to handle the pole at  $E = \frac{p^2}{2m}$ .

of how to handle the pole at  $E = \frac{p^2}{2m}$ . This problem can be resolved by going to imaginary time  $\tau$ , where the heat equation operator  $\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \tau} - \frac{1}{2m}\nabla^2\right)$  does not have the problems of the Schrödinger operator, since it has no  $L^2$  solution for all  $\tau$  only solutions that are well-behaved for  $\tau > 0$ 

To finish: path integral for Schwinger functions. Relation between moments and the operator formalism.

#### 9.5 Path integrals in general

Since the phase space for the non-relativistic quantum field theory is the space of fields  $\psi(t_0, \mathbf{x})$  at a constant time  $t_0$  (e.g.  $t_0 = 0$ ), one can think of the space of all fields  $\psi(t, \mathbf{x})$  formally integrated over in the previous section as a space of paths in phase space, parametrized by t. The infinite dimensional integrals are because of this known as "phase space path integrals". One can consider instead a simpler problem of a finite dimensional phase space  $P = \mathbf{R}^{2n}$  with coordinates  $q_j, p_j$ . A quantization of this phase space by path integral methods would involve integrals over the space of paths  $(q_i(t), p_i(t))$  in P, formally written as

$$\int \left(\prod_{t} [dq(t)][dp(t)]\right) e^{i \int \left(p \frac{dq}{dt} - h(q,p)\right) dt}$$
(9.1)

One can in some sense derive this integral from conventional quantum mechanics as follows.

• Take the time evolution operator  $U(t-t') = e^{-iH(t-t')}$ , break up the time interval t - t' into N pieces and U into a product of N terms.

- Between the terms in the product, alternately introduce an integration over q and p eigenstates.
- Take the limit N → ∞, with the integrations over q and p at each t becoming an integral over paths, and the matrix elements of the operators better and better approximated by the exponential factor in 9.1.

While one can make sense of this calculation, as a kernel for the operator U(t-t') between q eigenstates, it cannot be taken seriously as an actual integral over phase space, since it depends crucially on the chosen discretization. There are no eigenstates localized at both q and p so one must use eigenstates for q and for p separately and differently. To have an integral one wants the integrand to me a measure on path space, but there is nothing in the integrand giving any reason succeeding values of q or of p should be anywhere near each other, so this is not an integral over paths with any continuity properties.

As a formal device, equation 9.1 has wonderful invariance properties under symplectic transformations, since dqdp is the symplectic form on P and this symplectic form is d of the one form pdq in the integrand of the exponent. These invariance properties however are too wonderful, implying a quantum mechanical formalism with symmetry the infinite-dimensional group of symplectic transformations of P, while we have seen that the symmetry is only that of transformations generated by quadratic functions in q and p. If this integral had the expected invariance properties, a change of variables would identify it with the harmonic oscillator, and we know that there are quantum systems that are not harmonic oscillators.

When the Hamiltonian is quadratic in p, one can do all the integrals over the p eigenstates, and be left with an integral over paths q(t) in configuration space. One now formally has a configuration space path integral of the form

$$\int \left(\prod_{t} [dq(t)]\right) e^{i \int L(q,\dot{q})dt}$$
(9.2)

where L is the Lagrangian. Putting back in the dimensional constant  $\hbar$ , the integrand is

 $e^{\frac{i}{\hbar}S}$ 

where S is the action of a trajectory. This no longer has all of the bad properties of 9.1, and in addition has the attractive property that as  $\hbar \to 0$ , by the stationary phase approximation one would expect the integral to be dominated by paths such that  $\delta S = 0$ , which are the classical paths.

The integral 9.2 still is an integral over an infinite-dimensional space of a phase-valued function, and still cannot be understood in terms of any conventional notion of measure. If however one "Wick rotates" the problem from real time t to imaginary time  $\tau$ , the integrand will no longer be a phase and in some cases one can hope to interpret the path integral in terms of a legitimate measure. This works well for the case of the free particle, where the imaginary time path integral can be interpreted rigorously using Wiener measure.

Going back to quantum field theory, with its infinite dimensional configuration spaces and phase spaces, calculations in quantum field theory often start by trying to make sense of the notion of calculating, in Euclidean spacetime, path integrals of the form

$$\int [d\phi] e^{-S_E(\phi)} F(\phi)$$

Here  $F(\phi)$  is some functional of the fields  $\phi$ ,  $S_E$  is a Euclidean spacetime action, and the integral is supposed to be over the infinite-dimensional space of all possible field configurations. A great deal is known about special cases where one may be able to make sense of this, with one of the most important the case of quantum gauge theory, where the fields are connections and the action is the Yang-Mills action.

In other parts of the Standard Model, the path integrals involved will be, like for the non-relativistic quantum field theory path integral of section 9.4, phase space path integrals rather than configuration space path integrals. This is true of the matter fields, although in such cases we will see that the integrals are fermionic and just quadratic in the fields. As such, they are formal algebraic objects rather than measures.

#### 9.6 For further reading

Refer to [32]

## Chapter 10

# Geometry in 4 dimensions: vectors, spinors and twistors

Putting space and time together, physical spacetime is four rea -dimensional. The Maxwell theory of electromagnetic fields (to be discussed in chapter 15) is formulated in terms of four-dimensional vectors and tensors, but these transform not under the group SO(4) of four-dimensional rotations, but instead the Lorentz group SO(3, 1) of linear transformations preserving the Minkowski inner product:

$$(x,y) = -x_0y_0 + x_1y_1 + x_2y_2 + x_3y_3$$

The vector space  $\mathbf{R}^4$  with this inner product is called "Minkowski spacetime".

Einstein's special theory of relativity was essentially the realization that not just electromagnetic fields, but the dynamics of all particles and fields should transform in the same way under the Lorentz group, replacing the classical Newtonian mechanics. In coming chapters we will see how quantum mechanics and quantum field theory need to be reformulated to have Lorentz symmetry. In this and the next chapter we'll study in detail the geometry of four dimensions, including the Minkowski geometry.

Recall that the group SO(3) has a three-dimensional Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{so}(3)$  of antisymmetric 3 by 3 matrices. This has basis elements  $l_1, l_2, l_3$  given by elementary antisymmetric matrices with all entries 0 except for a 1 and a -1. One can add a row and column with index 0 and work with 4 by 4 matrices. The Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{so}(3, 1)$  has  $\mathfrak{so}(3)$  as a Lie sub-algebra, but also three new basis elements  $k_1, k_2, k_3$ . These are symmetric and have all entries 0 except for a 1 in the index 0 column and row. One has for instance

One can check that the  $k_j$  transform as the components of a vector under the rotations generated by the  $l_j$ . They don't however span a Lie subalgebra. and have Lie bracket relations

$$[k_1, k_2] = -l_3, \ [k_3, k_1] = -l_2, \ [k_2, k_3] = -l_1$$

The  $k_j$  generate transformations of  $\mathbf{R}^4$  called "boosts". For instance, exponentiating  $k_1$  gives the linear transformation that leaves  $x_2, x_3$  invariant and take

$$\begin{pmatrix} x_0 \\ x_1 \end{pmatrix} \to \begin{pmatrix} \cosh & \sinh \\ \sinh & \cosh \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} x_0 \\ x_1 \end{pmatrix}$$

The structure of  $\mathfrak{so}(3,1)$  simplifies if one complexifies the Lie algebra and defines new basis elements  $A_j, B_j$  as the complex linear combinations

$$A_j = \frac{1}{2}(l_j + ik_j), \ B_j = \frac{1}{2}(l_j - ik_j)$$

The bracket relations decouple into two identical sets for the  $A_j$  and  $B_j$  respectively, with the  $A_j$  relations

$$[A_1, A_2] = A_3, \ \ [A_3, A_1] = A_2, \ \ [A_2, A_3] = A_1$$

These are the Lie bracket relations for the Lie algebra  $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbb{C}) = \mathfrak{so}(3) \otimes \mathbb{C}$  and we have found that

$$\mathfrak{so}(3,1)\otimes \mathbf{C} = \mathfrak{sl}(2,\mathbf{C}) \oplus \mathfrak{sl}(2,\mathbf{C})$$

with the complexification breaking the Lie algebra up as the sum of two subalgebras.

In this chapter we'll study geometry in four complex dimensions, only returning to four real dimensions and Minkowski spacetime in the next chapter. We will see that there are several different ways in which going to complex dimensions clarifies and simplifies things, including

- Complex Lorentz transformations are pairs of  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  transformations (as we saw at the Lie algebra level above).
- Allowing the time coordinate to be complex allows one todo "Wick rotation", going to imaginary time, where one recovers the usual positive definite inner product.
- Complex spacetime can be very usefully represented as 2 by 2 complex matrices, with simple behavior under complex rotations and simple relation to spinors.
- Conformal transformations of complex spacetime are simply described using the group  $SL(4, \mathbb{C})$ .

#### 10.1 Complex spacetime

#### 10.1.1 Vectors

Complex spacetime vectors in  $V = \mathbf{C}^4$  with complex coordinates  $z_0, z_1, z_2, z_3$ can be identified with the complex matrices  $M(2, \mathbf{C})$  by

$$(z_0, z_1, z_2, z_3) \leftrightarrow Z = \begin{pmatrix} z_0 + z_3 & z_1 - z_2 \\ z_1 + z_2 & z_0 - z_3 \end{pmatrix}$$
(10.1)

If one acts on complex spacetime by the linear transformation

$$Z \to \Omega_L Z \Omega_R^{-1} \tag{10.2}$$

where  $\Omega_L$  and  $\Omega_R$  are complex matrices of determinant 1, such transformations preserve

$$\det Z = z_0^2 - z_1^2 + z_2^2 - z_3^2$$

so are elements of the complex orthogonal group  $SO(4, \mathbb{C})$  (this would be in standard form if we changed basis by a factor of *i* in the 1 and 3 directions).

This gives a homomorphism mapping the product group  $SL(2, \mathbf{C})_L \times SL(2, \mathbf{C})_R$ to  $SO(4, \mathbf{C})$ . It turns out that this mapping is surjective and 2 to 1 (since  $(-\Omega_L, -\Omega_R)$  and  $(\Omega_L, \Omega_R)$  give the same transformation). We find that

$$SL(2, \mathbf{C})_L \times SL(2, \mathbf{C})_R = Spin(4, \mathbf{C})$$

where  $Spin(4, \mathbb{C})$  is the spin double-cover of  $SO(4, \mathbb{C})$ . Note that it is only in 4 dimensions that the spin group is not a simple group, but decomposes into two factors.

#### 10.1.2 Spinors

In chapter 5 we discussed spinors in arbitrary dimensions. Now we are interested in their properties in the specific case of four dimensions, which has very specific and unusual properties, due to the decomposition of  $Spin(4, \mathbb{C})$  into two copies of  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$ .

The group  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  has two inequivalent spinor representations:

- The defining representation on  $\mathbb{C}^2$ , which we'll denote S. This representation is a holomorphic map  $SL(2, \mathbb{C}) \to GL(2, \mathbb{C})$  (the inclusion map).
- The conjugate representation on  $\mathbb{C}^2$  (action by conjugated matrices), which we'll denote  $\overline{S}$ . This representation is an anti-holomorphic map.

Note that these representations are non-unitary (the only non-trivial unitary representations of  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  are infinite-dimensional). These representations are both unitary and unitarily equivalent to each other as representations of  $SU(2) \subset SL(2, \mathbb{C})$ . They are self-dual (equivalent to their dual representations). We'll later see that there an  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  invariant nondegenerate antisymmetric

bilinear form (the symplectic form) that identifies S and  $\overline{S}$  with their respective duals.

Since  $Spin(4, \mathbb{C})$  has two  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  factors, it has four inequivalent spinor representations, which we'll call  $S_L, \overline{S}_L, S_R, \overline{S}_R$ .  $S_L, \overline{S}_L$  are spinor representations of  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})_L$ , trivial on  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})_R$ , while  $S_R, \overline{S}_R$  are spinor representations of  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})_R$ , trivial on  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})_L$ .

The conventional relation between vectors and spinors is to take

$$V = S_L \otimes S_R$$

defining vectors in terms of more fundamental spinor representations. Since both factors are holomorphic, this is a holomorphic representation. Equivalently, one has an identification of elements of V as complex linear maps

$$V = Hom(S_B^*, S_L)$$

with the description 10.1 of  $Z \in V$  corresponding to a particular choice of bases for  $S_R$  and  $S_L$ .

#### 10.1.3 The Clifford algebra and antisymmetric tensors

A future version may include discussion of the complex Clifford algebra here.

#### 10.1.4 Twistors

Twistor geometry is a 1967 proposal [19] due to Roger Penrose for a very different way of formulating four-dimensional spacetime geometry. For a detailed expository treatment of the subject, see [29]. Fundamental to twistor geometry is the twistor space  $T = \mathbf{C}^4$ , as well as its projective version, the space  $PT = \mathbf{CP}^3$  of complex lines in T. The relation of twistor space to conventional spacetime is that complexified and conformally compactified spacetime is identified with the Grassmanian  $M = G_{2,4}(\mathbf{C})$  of complex two-dimensional linear subspaces in T. A spacetime point is thus a  $\mathbf{C}^2$  in  $\mathbf{C}^4$  which tautologically provides the spinor degree of freedom at that point. The spinor bundle S is the tautological two-dimensional complex vector bundle over M whose fiber  $S_m$  at a point  $m \in M$  is the  $\mathbf{C}^2$  that defines the point.

The group  $SL(4, \mathbb{C})$  acts on T and acts transitively on the spaces PT and M of its complex subspaces. Points in the Grassmanian M can be represented as elements

$$\omega = (v_1 \otimes v_2 - v_2 \otimes v_1) \in \Lambda^2(\mathbf{C}^4)$$

by taking two vectors  $v_1, v_2$  spanning the subspace.  $\Lambda^2(\mathbf{C}^4)$  is six complex dimensional and scalar multiples of  $\omega$  gives the same point in M, so  $\omega$  identifies M with a subspace of  $P(\Lambda^2(\mathbf{C}^4)) = \mathbf{CP}^5$ . Such  $\omega$  satisfy the equation

$$\omega \wedge \omega = 0 \tag{10.3}$$

which identifies (the "Klein correspondence") M with a submanifold of  $\mathbb{CP}^5$  given by a non-degenerate quadratic form. Twistors are spinors in six dimensions, with the action of  $SL(4, \mathbb{C})$  on  $\Lambda^2(\mathbb{C}^4) = \mathbb{C}^6$  preserving the quadratic form 10.3, and giving the spin double-cover homomorphism

$$SL(4, \mathbf{C}) = Spin(6, \mathbf{C}) \rightarrow SO(6, \mathbf{C})$$

To get the tangent bundle of M, one needs not just the spinor bundle S, but also another two complex-dimensional vector bundle, the quotient bundle  $S^{\perp}$  with fiber  $S_m^{\perp} = \mathbf{C}^4 / S_m$ . Then the tangent bundle is

$$TM = Hom(S, S^{\perp}) = S^* \otimes S^{\perp}$$

with the tangent space  $T_m M$  a four complex dimensional vector space given by  $Hom(S_m, S_m^{\perp})$ , the linear maps from  $S_m$  to  $S_m^{\perp}$ .

For a simpler analog of M, consider the space  $\mathbb{C}P^1$  of complex lines in  $\mathbb{C}^2$ . There is also a tautological bundle over  $\mathbb{C}P^1$ , with fiber at each point the point itself. This bundle will be denoted  $L^{-1}$ , and it has a dual bundle denoted L. These are holomorphic line bundles and the holomorphic tangent bundle is  $(L^{-1})^* \otimes L = L \otimes L \equiv L^2$ . For  $\mathbb{C}P^1$  one has homogeneous coordinates  $z_1, z_2$ and can use as a coordinate  $z = z_1/z_2$  away from the point where  $z_2 = 0$ . The conformal group  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  acts on this coordinate by

$$\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \cdot z = \frac{az+b}{cz+d}$$

Returning to the Grassmannian M, one can use as homogenous coordinates the 4 by 2 complex matrix

$$\begin{pmatrix} Z_1 \\ Z_2 \end{pmatrix}$$

where  $Z_1, Z_2$  are complex 2 by 2 matrices, giving coordinates for the complex 2-plane in  $\mathbf{C}^4$  spanned by the columns. Away from planes with  $\det(Z_2) = 0$ , such homogeneous coordinates can be put in the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} Z \\ \mathbf{1} \end{pmatrix} \tag{10.4}$$

and the 2 by 2 complex matrix Z gives a coordinate on  $M = \mathbf{G}r_{2,4}(\mathbf{C})$ .

The complex conformal group  $SL(4, \mathbb{C})$  acts on this coordinate by

$$\begin{pmatrix} A & B \\ C & D \end{pmatrix} \cdot Z = (AZ + B)(CZ + D)^{-1}$$

The subgroup with C = 0 and det  $A = \det D = 1$  acts by

$$X \to AZD^{-1} + BD^{-1}$$

This is the exactly the action of  $Spin(4, \mathbb{C})$  on complex spacetime of equation 10.2, together with a translation by  $BD^{-1}$ , giving an action of the full complex Poincaré group.
An element of twistor space T is in the complex plane corresponding to Z exactly when it is of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} Z \\ \mathbf{1} \end{pmatrix} \pi = \begin{pmatrix} Z\pi \\ \pi \end{pmatrix}$$

for some  $\pi \in \mathbf{C}^2$ , since it then is a linear combination of the columns of 10.4. So, elements of T, written as

$$\begin{pmatrix} \omega \\ \pi \end{pmatrix}$$

where  $\omega, \pi \in \mathbf{C}^2$  are in the plane Z when they satisfy the incidence equation

$$\omega = Z\pi \tag{10.5}$$

From the above description of  $Spin(4, \mathbf{C}) = SL(2, \mathbf{C})_L \times SL(2, \mathbf{C})_R \subset SL(4, \mathbf{C})$ acting on T, we see that  $\omega$  is in the representation  $S_L$ , while  $\pi$  is in the representation  $S_R^*$ .

As a representation of  $SL(2, \mathbf{C})_L \times SL(2, \mathbf{C})_R$ , twistor space  $T = S_L \oplus S_R^*$ , which is the same thing as a Dirac spinor. But twistor space comes with additional structure, since it is an irreducible representation of a much larger group, the complex conformal group  $SL(4, \mathbf{C})$ .

A conventional component notation for spinors (sometimes known as the van der Waerden notation) is to write the components of spinors like  $\omega$  transforming as  $S_L$  as  $\omega^A$  (here A = 1, 2), and those transforming like  $S_L^*$  as  $\omega_A$ . Indices are raised and lowered by using an  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  invariant antisymmetric bilinear form  $\epsilon$ . Transformation properties under  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})_R$ , are indicated in the same way, but using dotted indices. So, the components of  $\pi$  would be written as  $\pi_{\dot{A}}$ .

Since  $\Lambda^2(S_L) = \Lambda^2(S_R) = \mathbf{C}$ ,  $S_L$  and  $S_R$  have (up to scalars) unique choices of non-degenerate antisymmetric bilinear forms, and corresponding choices of  $SL(2, \mathbf{C}) \subset GL(2, \mathbf{C})$  acting on  $S_L$  and  $S_R$ . These give (again, up to scalars), a unique choice of a non-degenerate symmetric form on  $S_L \otimes S_R$ , such that

$$\langle Z, Z \rangle = \det Z$$

Besides the spaces PT and M of complex lines and planes in T, it is also useful to consider the correspondence space whose elements are complex lines inside a complex plane in T. This space can also be thought of as P(S), the projective spinor bundle over M. There is a diagram of maps



where  $\nu$  is the projection map for the bundle P(S) and  $\mu$  is the identification of a complex line in S as a complex line in T.  $\mu$  and  $\nu$  give a correspondence between geometric objects in PT and M. One can easily see that  $\mu(\nu^{-1}(m))$  is the complex projective line in PT corresponding to a point  $m \in M$  (a complex two plane in T is a complex projective line in PT). In the other direction,  $\nu(\mu^{-1})$  takes a point p in PT to  $\alpha(p)$ , a copy of  $\mathbb{C}P^2$  in M, called the " $\alpha$ -plane" corresponding to p.

In our chosen coordinate chart, this diagram of maps is given by



The incidence equation 10.5 relating PT and M implies that an  $\alpha$ -plane is a null plane in the metric discussed above. This is because given two points  $Z_1, Z_2$  in M corresponding to the same point in PT, their difference satisfies

$$\omega = (Z_1 - Z_2)\pi = 0$$

 $Z_1 - Z_2$  is not an invertible matrix, so has determinant 0 and is a null vector.

### 10.2 Real forms

Physical spacetime has 4 real dimensions rather than complex dimensions. The spinor and twistor aspects of geometry in four dimensions become significantly more intricate subjects when one considers the several different possibilities for 4 real dimensional geometries complexifying to the same complex geometry considered in the previous chapter.

### **10.2.1** Real forms of complex representations

One normally studies Lie group representations as linear actions on a complex vector space V, but one should take into account the fact that the groups involved are real Lie groups, so one can ask about representations on real vector spaces. In some cases the groups are quaternionic and one can ask about representations on quaternionic vector spaces. The various possibilities can be studied by always working with representations on complex vector spaces and keeping track of extra structures relating these to real or quaternionic vector spaces. It turns out that there are three possibilities:

• Real representations. A representation on a complex vector space V is a real representation if one has a representation on a real vector space  $V_{\mathbf{R}}$  such that

$$V_{\mathbf{R}} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C} = V$$

This is equivalent to the existence of an anti-linear map  $\sigma: V \to V$  such that  $\sigma^2 = 1$ .  $\sigma$  provides a conjugation on V and one can identify  $V_{\mathbf{R}}$  as the fixed points of the  $\sigma$  action. In this case the representation V and the conjugate representation  $\overline{V}$  are equivalent.

- Quaternionic representations. A representation on a complex vector space V is a quaternionic representation if one has an anti-linear map  $\sigma : V \to V$  such that  $\sigma^2 = -1$ . In this case  $\sigma$  provides an action of the quaternion  $\mathbf{j}$  on V. The full quaternion algebra acts on V, with the *i* from the action of complex numbers on V providing  $\mathbf{i}$ , and taking  $\mathbf{k} = \mathbf{ij}$ . Such representations on V are equivalent to their conjugate representation. They are sometimes called "pseudo-real" representation.
- Complex representations. A representation on a complex vector space V is a complex representation if it is neither real nor quaternionic. In this case V is not equivalent to its conjugate representation  $\overline{V}$ . Given such a V, one can form a real representation on  $V \oplus \overline{V}$ , taking  $\sigma$  to be the conjugation that interchanges V and  $\overline{V}$ .

An alternative point of view on this classification is that for an irreducible real representation V of a real Lie group, the argument for Schur's lemma no longer gives that  $\operatorname{End}_G(V) = \mathbf{C}$ , but that it can be any division algebra over  $\mathbf{R}$ . The classification above corresponds to the fact that the three division algebras over  $\mathbf{R}$  are  $\mathbf{R}, \mathbf{C}, \mathbf{H}$ . For further details, see for example [20].

We will see that there are three different real forms of the complex representations on vectors, spinors and twistors of chapter 10. In all cases the vector representation is a real representation, but this will not be true for the spinors and twistors.

### **10.2.2** The signature (2,2) real form

One can obviously define a conjugation  $\sigma$  on the complex spacetime V by conjugating the matrix entries

$$\sigma \cdot \begin{pmatrix} z_0 + z_3 & z_1 - z_2 \\ z_1 + z_2 & z_0 - z_3 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \overline{z}_0 + \overline{z}_3 & \overline{z}_1 - \overline{z}_2 \\ \overline{z}_1 + \overline{z}_2 & \overline{z}_0 - \overline{z}_3 \end{pmatrix}$$

by conjugating the matrix entries. Then the fixed points of  $\sigma$  are the real matrices

$$X = \begin{pmatrix} x_0 + x_3 & x_1 - x_2 \\ x_1 + x_2 & x_0 - x_3 \end{pmatrix}$$

The determinant of such a matrix is  $x_0^2 - x_1^2 + x_2^2 - x_3^2$ . Taking this as the norm-squared of an inner product, the inner product is indefinite, of signature (2, 2). So we have a real spacetime  $V_{2,2}$  such that

$$V_{2,2} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C} = V$$

The corresponding real form of the group  $Spin(4, \mathbb{C})$  is the subgroup

$$Spin(2,2) = SL(2,\mathbf{R})_L \times SL(2,\mathbf{R})_R$$

preserving  $\sigma$ . The spinor representations are also real: with the usual conjugation  $\sigma$ . The fixed points are the representations of  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})_L$  and  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})_R$ on  $\mathbf{R}^2$ . Twistors are also real, with  $\sigma$  acting on T by the usual conjugation, with fixed points  $T_{\mathbf{R}} = \mathbf{R}^4$ . The real points of the compactified complex spacetime  $G_{2,4}(\mathbf{C})$  are the points of the real Grassmanian  $G_{2,4}(\mathbf{R})$  of real 2-planes in  $\mathbf{R}^4$ . The conformal group acting on this space is the real form  $SL(4, \mathbf{R}) = Spin(3,3)$ of the complex spacetime conformal group  $SL(4, \mathbf{C}) = Spin(6, \mathbf{C})$ .

### **10.2.3** The signature (4,0) real form: Euclidean spacetime

Euclidean spacetime is a real form  $V_E$  of complex spacetime (i.e.  $V_E \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C} = V$ ), with a positive definite inner product. The spinor representations and twistors are quaternionic, and we will begin by describing this real form in purely quaternionic terms. In these terms one can readily identify the Euclidean real forms  $Sp(1) \times Sp(1) = Spin(4)$  of the complex rotation group  $Spin(4, \mathbf{C})$  and  $SL(2, \mathbf{H}) = Spin(5, 1)$  of the complex conformal group  $SL(4, \mathbf{C})$ . The group  $SL(2, \mathbf{H})$  is the group of quaternionic 2 by 2 matrices satisfying a single condition that one can think of as setting the determinant to one. Here one can interpret the determinant using the isomorphism with complex matrices, or, at the Lie algebra level,  $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{H})$  is the Lie algebra of 2 by 2 quaternionic matrices with purely imaginary trace.

#### Quaternions and four-dimensional geometry

Just as **C** is the vector space  $\mathbf{R}^2$  with a basis  $\{1, i\}$ , and a multiplication law determined by the relation  $i^2 = -1$ , the quaternion algebra **H** is the vector space  $\mathbf{R}^4$  with a basis  $\{1, \mathbf{i}, \mathbf{j}, \mathbf{k}\}$  and a multiplication law determined by the relations

$$i^{2} = j^{2} = k^{2} = -1$$
,  $ij = -ji = k$ ,  $ki = -ik = j$ ,  $jk = -kj = i$ 

Elements of  $\mathbf{H}$  can be written as

$$q = q_0 + q_1 \mathbf{i} + q_2 \mathbf{j} + q_3 \mathbf{k}, \ q_j \in \mathbf{R}$$

The standard Euclidean norm-squared function on the vector space  $\mathbf{H} = \mathbf{R}^4$ can be written in terms of quaternions as

$$|q|^2 = q\bar{q} = q_0^2 + q_1^2 + q_2^2 + q_3^2$$

where

$$ar{q} = q_0 - q_1 \mathbf{i} - q_2 \mathbf{j} - q_3 \mathbf{k}$$

The unit norm quaternions form a group under multiplication, called Sp(1), which as a manifold can be identified with the three dimensional sphere  $S^3 \subset \mathbf{R}^4$ . Pairs (u, v) of unit quaternions give the product group  $Sp(1)_L \times Sp(1)_R$ . An element (u, v) of this group acts on  $q \in \mathbf{H} = \mathbf{R}^4$  by left and right quaternionic multiplication

$$q \rightarrow uqv^-$$

This action preserves norms of vectors and is linear in q, so one has a homo-morphism

$$\Phi: (u,v) \in Sp(1)_L \times Sp(1)_R \to \{q \to uqv^{-1}\} \in SO(4)$$

 $\Phi$  is surjective, and pairs (u, v) and (-u, -v) give the same element of SO(4). The group  $Sp(1)_L \times Sp(1)_R$  is the group Spin(4), a non-trivial double cover of the group SO(4). The diagonal subgroup of pairs (u, v) such that u = vleaves invariant 1 and acts by an SO(3) transformation on the  $\mathbf{R}^3 \subset \mathbf{H}$  of imaginary quaternions.  $\Phi$  restricted to this diagonal subgroup is a double cover homomorphism from the group Spin(3) = Sp(1) to the group SO(3).

There are two inequivalent quaternionic spinor representations of Spin(4). We'll denote  $S_L$  the representation of Spin(4) on **H** given by  $Sp(1)_L$  acting on the left,  $Sp(1)_R$  acting trivially, and  $S_R$  the representation of Spin(4) on **H** given by  $Sp(1)_L$  acting trivially,  $Sp(1)_R$  acting on the right.

For a Euclidean spacetime version of twistor space, one can take  $T = \mathbf{H}^2$ , with T a quaternionic representation of the conformal group  $SL(2, \mathbf{H}) = Spin(5, 1)$ . A spacetime point will be a quaternionic line in  $T = \mathbf{H}^2$ , and spacetime  $M_E$  will be  $\mathbf{H}P^1 = S^4$ , the conformal compactification of the Euclidean space  $\mathbf{R}^4$ . The group  $SL(2, \mathbf{H})$  acts transitively on  $M_E = \mathbf{H}P^1 = S^4$  by conformal transformations.

Just as in the case of  $\mathbb{C}P^1$ , one can use as homogeneous coordinates

$$\begin{pmatrix} X_1 \\ X_2 \end{pmatrix}$$

where  $X_1, X_2 \in \mathbf{H}$ . Away from  $X_2 = 0$ , these can be put in the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} X \\ \mathbf{1} \end{pmatrix}$$

with  $X \in \mathbf{H}$ . The conformal group  $SL(2, \mathbf{H})$  acts by

$$\begin{pmatrix} A & B \\ C & D \end{pmatrix} \cdot X = (AX + B)(CX + D)^{-1}$$

where now  $A, B, C, D \in \mathbf{H}$ . The Euclidean group in four dimensions will be the subgroup of elements of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} A & B \\ 0 & D \end{pmatrix}$$

such that A and D are independent unit quaternions, thus in the group Sp(1), and B is an arbitrary quaternion. The Euclidean group acts by

$$X \to AXD^{-1} + BD^{-1}$$

with the spin double cover of the rotational subgroup now  $Spin(4) = Sp(1) \times Sp(1)$ .

### Relating quaternionic and complex

While we have seen that the translations, rotations and conformal transformations of four dimensional Euclidean geometry can be efficiently understood purely in terms of quaternions, it is often desirable to instead work with complex quantities, together with an antilinear  $\sigma$  satisfying  $\sigma^2 = -1$  on quaternionic representations and  $\sigma^2 = 1$  on real representations (note that one gets real representations when working with quaternions since the tensor product of two quaternionic representations is real).

To identify  $\mathbf{H}$  with  $\mathbf{C}^2$ , there are various choices to be made:

- One can identify **C** as the subalgebra of **H** spanned by 1, u, where u is any element satisfying  $u^2 = -1$ . There is an  $S^2$  of possibilities (any unit length linear combination of the purely imaginary quaternions).
- Choosing a  $v \in \mathbf{H}$  such that  $v^2 = -1$  and uv = -vu gives a **C**-basis of **H**, so an identification with  $\mathbf{C}^2$ .

The conventional choices made are:  $u = \mathbf{i}$  (giving a consistent meaning for the symbol "i") and  $v = \mathbf{j}$ . Then an arbitrary quaternion can be written as

$$q = z_1 + \mathbf{j} z_2$$

 $\begin{pmatrix} z_1 \\ z_2 \end{pmatrix}$ 

or as a vector

Here one is also making the choice that, as a complex vector space, the subalgebra of **H** of complex numbers acts on **H** on the right. As a complex spinor representation of Sp(1), the group acts on the left, with a commuting action of **H** on the right. This will be a quaternionic representation, with a standard choice of  $\sigma$  right multiplication by **j**. Since

$$(z_1 + \mathbf{j} z_2)\mathbf{j} = \mathbf{j}\overline{z}_1 + \mathbf{j}^2\overline{z}_2 = -\overline{z}_2 + \mathbf{j}\overline{z}_1$$

 $\sigma$  acts by

$$\sigma: \begin{pmatrix} z_1\\z_2 \end{pmatrix} \to \begin{pmatrix} -\overline{z}_1\\\overline{z}_2 \end{pmatrix}$$

On the Euclidean version of twistor space, one has  $T = \mathbf{C}^4$ , with quaternionic structure map  $\sigma$  given by

$$\sigma: \begin{pmatrix} z_1\\ z_2\\ z_3\\ z_4 \end{pmatrix} \to \begin{pmatrix} -\overline{z}_1\\ \overline{z}_2\\ -\overline{z}_3\\ \overline{z}_4 \end{pmatrix}$$
(10.6)

The group  $SL(2, \mathbf{H})$  acts on this quaternionic representation, which is just the complex form of the action on  $\mathbf{H}^2$ .

Given this identification of  $\mathbf{H}$  with  $\mathbf{C}^2$ , one can use the left action of  $\mathbf{H}$  on this  $\mathbf{C}^2$  to get an isomorphism of algebras between  $\mathbf{H}$  and the subalgebra of  $M(2, \mathbf{C})$  of matrices of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} \alpha & -\overline{\beta} \\ \beta & \overline{\alpha} \end{pmatrix}$$
(10.7)

for  $\alpha, \beta \in \mathbf{C}$ . As an algebra ,  $M(2, \mathbf{C})$  has two inequivalent real forms:  $M(2, \mathbf{R})$  and **H** are non-ismorphic algebras satisfying

$$M(2, \mathbf{R}) \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C} = \mathbf{H} \otimes_{\mathbf{R}} \mathbf{C} = M(2, \mathbf{C})$$

The usual conjugation of complex matrices has fixed points  $M(2, \mathbf{R})$ . An inequivalent conjugation  $\sigma$  on  $M(2, \mathbf{C})$  corresponding to the real form **H** is given by

$$\sigma \cdot \begin{pmatrix} \alpha & \gamma \\ \beta & \delta \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \overline{\delta} & -\overline{\beta} \\ -\overline{\gamma} & \overline{\alpha} \end{pmatrix}$$

This satisfies  $\sigma^2 = 1$  and is clearly antilinear, with fixed points of the form 10.7.

More explicitly, the identification  $10.7\ {\rm takes}$ 

$$1 \leftrightarrow \mathbf{1} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \mathbf{i} \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} i & 0 \\ 0 & -i \end{pmatrix}, \quad \mathbf{j} \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \mathbf{k} \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -i \\ -i & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

Physicists often like to use instead the Pauli matrices, taking

$$1 \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \mathbf{i} \leftrightarrow -i\sigma_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -i \\ -i & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \mathbf{j} \leftrightarrow -i\sigma_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$
$$\mathbf{k} \leftrightarrow -i\sigma_3 = \begin{pmatrix} -i & 0 \\ 0 & i \end{pmatrix}$$

The correspondence between  $\mathbf{H}$  and 2 by 2 complex matrices is then given by

$$q = q_0 + q_1 \mathbf{i} + q_2 \mathbf{j} + q_3 \mathbf{k} \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} q_0 - iq_3 & -(q_2 + iq_1) \\ q_2 - iq_1 & q_0 + iq_3 \end{pmatrix}$$

In general we'll avoid choosing between the mathematicians and physicists by avoiding an explicit choice of one of the two identifications above.

Since

$$\det \begin{pmatrix} q_0 - iq_3 & -(q_2 + iq_1) \\ q_2 - iq_1 & q_0 + iq_3 \end{pmatrix} = q_0^2 + q_1^2 + q_2^2 + q_3^2$$

we see that the length-squared function on quaternions corresponds to the determinant function on 2 by 2 complex matrices. Taking  $q \in Sp(1)$ , so of length one, the corresponding complex matrix is in SU(2).

Still to do? Understand vectors as a tensor product  $\mathbf{h} = \mathbf{H} \otimes_{\mathbf{H}} \mathbf{H}$ , explicitly how the spinor representation as a right action works. The usual conjugation on quaternions in terms of matrices?

### Projective twistor space and Euclidean twistors

The projective twistor space PT is fibered over  $S^4$  by complex projective lines

$$CP^{1} \longrightarrow PT = CP^{3}$$

$$\downarrow^{\pi}$$

$$S^{4} = \mathbf{H}P^{1}$$
(10.8)

The projection map  $\pi$  is just the map that takes a complex line in T identified with  $\mathbf{H}^2$  to the corresponding quaternionic line it generates (multiplying elements by arbitrary quaternions). In this case the conjugation map  $\sigma$  of 10.6 has no fixed points on PT, but does fix the complex projective line fibers and thus the points in  $S^4 \subset M$ . The action of  $\sigma$  on a fiber takes a point on the sphere to the opposite point, so has no fixed points.

In the Euclidean case, the projective twistor space has another interpretation, as the bundle of orientation preserving orthogonal complex structures on  $S^4$ . A complex structure on a real vector space V is a linear map J such that  $J^2 = -1$ , providing a way to give V the structure of a complex vector space (multiplication by *i* is multiplication by J). J is orthogonal if it preserves an inner product on V. While on  $\mathbb{R}^2$  there is just one orientation-preserving orthogonal complex structure, on  $\mathbb{R}^4$  the possibilities can be parametrized by a sphere  $S^2$ . The fiber  $S^2 = \mathbb{C}P^1$  of 10.8 above a point on  $S^4$  can be interpreted as the space of orientation preserving orthogonal complex structures on the four real dimensional tangent space to  $S^4$  at that point.

One way of exhibiting these complex structures on  $\mathbf{R}^4$  is to identify  $\mathbf{R}^4 = \mathbf{H}$ and then note that, for any real numbers  $x_1, x_2, x_3$  such that  $x_1^2 + x_2^2 + x_3^2 = 1$ , one gets an orthogonal complex structure on  $\mathbf{R}^4$  by taking

$$J = x_1 \mathbf{i} + x_2 \mathbf{j} + x_3 \mathbf{k}$$

Another way to see this is to note that the rotation group SO(4) acts on orthogonal complex structures, with a U(2) subgroup preserving the complex structure, so the space of these is SO(4)/U(2), which can be identified with  $S^2$ .

More explicitly, in our choice of coordinates, the projection map is

$$\pi: \begin{bmatrix} s \\ s^{\perp} = Zs \end{bmatrix} \to Z = \begin{pmatrix} x_0 - ix_3 & -ix_1 - x_2 \\ -ix_1 + x_2 & x_0 + ix_3 \end{pmatrix}$$

For any choice of s in the fiber above  $Z, s^{\perp}$  associates to the four real coordinates specifying Z an element of  $\mathbf{C}^2$ . For instance, if s = (1, 0), the identification of  $\mathbf{R}^4$  with  $\mathbf{C}^2$  is

$$\begin{pmatrix} x_0 \\ x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{pmatrix} \leftrightarrow \begin{pmatrix} x_0 - ix_3 \\ -ix_1 + x_2 \end{pmatrix}$$

The complex structure on  $\mathbf{R}^4$  one gets is not changed if s gets multiplied by a complex scalar, so it just depends on the point [s] in the  $\mathbf{C}P^1$  fiber.

For another point of view on this, one can see that for each point  $p \in PT$ , the corresponding  $\alpha$ -plane  $\nu(\mu^{-1}(p))$  in M intersects its conjugate  $\sigma(\nu(\mu^{-1}(p)))$ in exactly one real point,  $\pi(p) \in M^4$ . The corresponding line in PT is the line determined by the two points p and  $\sigma(p)$ . At the same time, this  $\alpha$ -plane provides an identification of the tangent space to  $M^4$  at  $\pi(p)$  with a complex two plane, the  $\alpha$ -plane itself. The  $\mathbb{C}P^1$  of  $\alpha$  -planes corresponding to a point in  $S^4$  are the different possible ways of identifying the tangent space at that point with a complex vector space.

The correspondence space P(S) (here the complex lines in the quaternionic line specifying a point in  $M^4 = S^4$ ) is just PT itself, and the twistor correspondence between PT and  $S^4$  is just the projection  $\pi$ . In the Euclidean case the action of the real form  $SL(2, \mathbf{H})$  is transitive on PT.

### **10.2.4** The (3,1) real form: Minkowski spacetime

The Maxwell equations describing electromagnetism (see section ??) are invariant under the group SO(3,1) acting on spacetime, taken to be the Minkowski spacetime  $\mathbf{R}^{3,1}$ , the four dimensional space  $\mathbf{R}^4$  with an indefinite inner product given by

$$(x,y) \equiv x \cdot y = -x_0y_0 + x_1y_1 + x_2y_2 + x_3y_3$$

(here  $x_j, y_j$  are coordinates on  $\mathbf{R}^4$ , with j = 0 the time coordinate). Einstein's discovery of special relativity was based on the observation that for consistency one should describe not just electromagnetism but also mechanics in a formalism based on taking spacetime to be  $\mathbf{R}^{3,1}$ , with physical laws invariant under SO(3,1).

Vectors  $v \in \mathbf{R}^{3,1}$  such that  $|v|^2 = v \cdot v > 0$  are called "space-like", those with  $|v|^2 < 0$  "time-like" and those with  $|v|^2 = 0$  are said to lie on the "light cone". Suppressing one space dimension, the picture to keep in mind of Minkowski spacetime looks like this:



Figure 10.1: Light cone structure of Minkowski spacetime.

Like  $\mathbf{R}^{2,2}$  and  $\mathbf{H}$ ,  $\mathbf{R}^{3,1}$  is a real form of  $M(2, \mathbf{C})$ . The conjugation  $\sigma$  is given by

$$\sigma \cdot Z = -Z^{\dagger}$$

with fixed points the skew-Hermitian matrices, of the form

$$X = (-i) \begin{pmatrix} x_0 + x_3 & x_1 - ix_2 \\ x_1 + ix_2 & x_0 - x_3 \end{pmatrix}$$

which have determinant

$$\det X = -x_0^2 + x_1^2 + x_2^2 + x_3^2$$

The subgroup of  $Spin(4, \mathbf{C}) = SL(2, \mathbf{C})_L \times SL(2, \mathbf{C})_R$  that commutes with the action of  $\sigma$  and thus preserves skew-Hermiticity is the group  $SL(2, \mathbf{C})$ , with  $\Omega \in SL(2, \mathbf{C})$  acting by

$$X \to \Omega X \Omega^{\dagger}$$

where  $\Omega^{\dagger}$  is the adjoint (conjugate transpose) of  $\Omega$ . Recall that SL(2, C) has two kinds of spinor representations: S (action by  $\Omega$ ) and the conjugate representation  $\overline{S}$  (action by  $\overline{\Omega}$ ). Vectors in Minkowski spacetime thus transform under the Lorentz group  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  as the tensor product  $S \otimes \overline{S}$ . Explain that  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  is double cover of component of SO(3, 1) preserving time orientation.

Spinors have some quite different properties in Minkowski spacetime than in the signature (2, 2) and Euclidean cases. These  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  representations are not real or quaternionic, but complex, so there is no antilinear  $\sigma : S \to S$  or  $\sigma : \overline{S} \to \overline{S}$  commuting with  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$ . What there is instead is an antilinear map  $\sigma$  from S to S<sup>\*</sup>, which is a map of  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  representations

$$\sigma: S \to \overline{S}$$

This takes a representation matrix  $\Omega$  to  $(\Omega^{\dagger})^{-1}$  and satisfies  $\sigma^2 = 1$ .  $\sigma$  gives a real structure on the  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  representation  $S \oplus \overline{S}^*$  which interchanges the terms in the direct sum. This real  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  representation is known to physicists as the Majorana representation. On  $\sigma$  fixed points it is an  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  representation on a 4-real dimensional vector space, equivalent to considering  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$ as a real Lie group, and  $\mathbb{C}^2$  as a real vector space (*check this*).

The twistor geometry in the Minkowski signature case also has different properties. As in the case of spinors, twistor space T is a complex representation of  $SL(4, \mathbb{C})$ , and one needs to consider not just T with an antilinear map  $\sigma$ , but T and  $T^*$  with an antilinear map between them. Such a map  $\sigma$  will give an identification of T and  $\overline{T}^*$ , and so a non-degenerate Hermitian form  $\Phi$  on T. This picks out a unitary subgroup of  $SL(4, \mathbb{C})$  which turns out to have signature (2, 2). So, in this case, the real form of the complex conformal group is the conformal group SU(2, 2) = Spin(4, 2).

The conformal compactification of Minkowski space is a real submanifold of M, denoted here by  $M^{3,1}$ . It is acted upon transitively by the conformal group Spin(4,2) = SU(2,2). This conformal group action on  $M^{3,1}$  is most naturally understood using twistor space, as the action on complex planes in T coming from the action of the real form  $SU(2,2) \subset SL(4, \mathbb{C})$  on T.

SU(2,2) is the subgroup of  $SL(4, \mathbb{C})$  preserving a real Hermitian form  $\Phi$  of signature (2,2) on  $T = \mathbb{C}^4$ . In our coordinates for T, a standard choice for  $\Phi$  is given by

$$\Phi\left(\begin{pmatrix}\omega\\\pi\end{pmatrix},\begin{pmatrix}\omega'\\\pi'\end{pmatrix}\right) = \begin{pmatrix}\overline{\omega} & \overline{\pi}\end{pmatrix}\begin{pmatrix}0 & 1\\1 & 0\end{pmatrix}\begin{pmatrix}\omega'\\\pi'\end{pmatrix} = \omega^{\dagger}\pi' + \pi^{\dagger}\omega'$$
(10.9)

Minkowski space is given by complex planes on which  $\Phi = 0$ , so

$$\Phi\left(\begin{pmatrix} X\pi\\\pi \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} X\pi\\\pi \end{pmatrix}\right) = \pi^{\dagger}(X+X^{\dagger})\pi = 0$$

(recall that X are skew-Hermitian matrices).

One can identify compactified Minkowski space  $M^{3,1}$  as a manifold with the Lie group U(2) which is diffeomorphic to  $(S^3 \times S^1)/\mathbb{Z}_2$ . The identification of the tangent space with anti-Hermitian matrices reflects the usual identification of the tangent space of U(2) at the identity with the Lie algebra of anti-Hermitian matrices.

 $SL(4, \mathbb{C})$  matrices are in SU(2, 2) when they satisfy

$$\begin{pmatrix} A^{\dagger} & C^{\dagger} \\ B^{\dagger} & D^{\dagger} \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} A & B \\ C & D \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

The Poincaré subgroup P of SU(2,2) is given by elements of SU(2,2) of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} A & B \\ 0 & (A^{\dagger})^{-1} \end{pmatrix}$$

where  $A \in SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  and  $A^{\dagger}B = -B^{\dagger}A$ . These act on Minkowski space by

$$X \to (AX + B)A^{\dagger}$$

 $BA^{\dagger}$  is anti-Hermitian and gives arbitrary translations on Minkowski space. The Lorentz subroup is  $Spin(3,1) = SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  acts by

$$X \to AXA^{\dagger}$$

Here  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  is acting by the standard representation on S, and by the conjugatedual representation on  $\overline{S}^*$ .

The SU(2,2) action on M has six orbits:  $M_{++}, M_{--}, M_{+0}, M_{-0}, M_{00}$ , where the subscript indicates the signature of  $\Phi$  restricted to planes corresponding to points in the orbit. The last of these is a closed orbit  $M^{3,1}$ , compactified Minkowski space. Acting on projective twistor space PT, there are three orbits:  $PT_+, PT_-, PT_0$ , where the subscript indicates the sign of  $\Phi$  restricted to the line in T corresponding to a point in the orbit. The first two are open orbits with six real dimensions, the last a closed orbit with five real dimensions. The points in compactified Minkowski space  $M_{00} = M^{3,1}$  correspond to projective lines in PT that lie in the five dimensional space  $PT_0$ . Points in  $M_{++}$  and  $M_{--}$ correspond to projective lines in  $PT_+$  or  $PT_-$  respectively.

### 10.3 For further reading

Among the places one can find more details of the material in this chapter, see [29] and [16].

## Chapter 11

# The Poincaré group and its representations

In chapter 6 we classified the irreducible unitary representations of the (double cover of the) Euclidean group E(3) and showed that these could be constructed on the state space of a quantum free particle, allowing the wavefunctions to take values in various representations of Spin(3). Adding a dimension and going to spacetime, one can classify irreducible representations by the same method. Such irreducible representations give the possible descriptions of a relativistic particle, providing the single-particle state space  $\mathcal{H}_1$  that one can imagine second-quantizing to get a relativistic quantum field theory. In this chapter we'll discuss the Poincaré group and the classification of its irreducible representations.

### 11.1 The Poincaré group and its Lie algebra

Definition (Poincaré group). The Poincaré group is the semi-direct product

$$\mathcal{P} = \mathbf{R}^4 \rtimes SO(3,1)$$

with double cover

$$\tilde{\mathcal{P}} = \mathbf{R}^4 \rtimes SL(2, \mathbf{C})$$

The action of SO(3,1) or  $SL(2, \mathbb{C})$  on  $\mathbb{R}^4$  is the action of the Lorentz group on Minkowski spacetime.

We will refer to either of these as the "Poincaré group", with the double cover only necessary when discussing representations of half-integral spin.

The Lie algebra  $Lie \mathcal{P} = Lie \mathcal{P}$  has dimension 10, with basis

$$t_0, t_1, t_2, t_3, l_1, l_2, l_3, k_1, k_2, k_3$$

where the first four elements are a basis of the Lie algebra of the translation group, and the next six are a basis of  $\mathfrak{so}(3, 1)$ . Note that infinitesimal boosts

 $(k_j)$  do not commute with infinitesimal time translation  $t_0$ , so after quantization boosts will not commute with the Hamiltonian. Boosts will act on spaces of single-particle wavefunctions in a relativistic theory, and on states of a relativistic quantum field theory, but are not symmetries in the sense of preserving spaces of energy eigenstates.

# 11.2 Irreducible representations of the Poincaré group

Recall that in the E(3) case we had two Casimir operators:

$$P^2 = P_1^2 + P_2^2 + P_3^2$$

and

$$\mathbf{J}\cdot\mathbf{P}$$

Here  $P_j$  is the representation operator for Lie algebra representation, corresponding to an infinitesimal translation in the *j*-direction.  $J_j$  is the operator for an infinitesimal rotation about the *j*-axis. The Lie algebra commutation relations of E(3) ensure that these two operators commute with the action of E(3) and thus, by Schur's lemma, act as a scalar on an irreducible representation. Note that the fact that the first Casimir operator is a differential operator in position space and commutes with the E(3) action means that the eigenvalue equation

$$P^2\psi = c\psi$$

has a space of solutions that is a E(3) representation, and potentially irreducible.

In the Poincaré group case, there are also two Casimir operators, but now they are

•

$$P^2 \equiv -P_0^2 + P_1^2 + P_2^2 + P_3^2$$

$$W^2 = -W_0^2 + W_1^2 + W_2^2 + W_3^2$$

Here W is the Pauli-Lubanski operator

 $W_0 = -\mathbf{P} \cdot \mathbf{J}, \ \mathbf{W} = -P_0 \mathbf{J} + \mathbf{P} \times \mathbf{K}$ 

To classify Poincaré group representations, we have two tools available. We can use the two Casimir operators  $P^2$  and  $W^2$  and characterize irreducible representations by their eigenvalues. In addition, recall that irreducible representations of semi-direct products  $N \rtimes K$  (N commutativ) are associated with pairs of a K-orbit  $\mathcal{O}_{\alpha}$  for  $\alpha \in \hat{N}$ , and an irreducible representation of the corresponding little group  $K_{\alpha}$ .

For the Poincaré group,  $\hat{N} = \mathbf{R}^4$  is the space of characters (one dimensional representations) of the translation group of Minkowski space. Elements  $\alpha$  are labeled by

$$p = (p_0, p_1, p_2, p_3)$$

where the  $p_{\mu}$  are the eigenvalues of the energy-momentum operators  $P_{\mu}$ . For representations on wavefunctions, these eigenvalues will correspond to elements in the representation space with space-time dependence.

 $e^{i(-p_0x_0+p_1x_1+p_2x_2+p_3x_3)}$ 

Given an irreducible representation, the operator  $P^2$  will act by the scalar

$$-p_0^2 + p_1^2 + p_2^2 + p_3^2$$

which can be positive, negative, or zero, so given by  $m^2, -m^2, 0$  for various m. The value of the scalar will be the same everywhere on the orbit, so in energy-momentum space, orbits will satisfy one of the three equations

$$-p_0^2 + p_1^2 + p_2^2 + p_3^2 = \begin{cases} -m^2 \\ m^2 \\ 0 \end{cases}$$

The representation can be further characterized in one of two ways:

- By the value of the second Casimir operator  $W^2$ .
- By the representation of the stabilizer group  $K_p$  on the eigenspace of the momentum operators with eigenvalue p.

At the point p on an orbit, the Pauli-Lubanski operator has components

$$W_0 = -\mathbf{p} \cdot \mathbf{J}, \quad \mathbf{W} = -p_0 \mathbf{J} + \mathbf{p} \times \mathbf{K}$$

In the next chapter we will find the possible orbits, then pick a point p on each orbit, and see what the stabilizer group  $K_p$  and Pauli-Lubanski operator are at that point.

### 11.3 Classification of representations by orbits

The Lorentz group acts on the energy-momentum space  $\mathbf{R}^4$  by

 $p\to\Lambda p$ 

and, restricting attention to the  $p_0p_3$  plane, the picture of the orbits looks like this



Figure 11.1: Orbits of vectors under the Lorentz group.

Unlike the Euclidean group case, here there are several different kinds of orbits  $\mathcal{O}_p$ . We'll examine them and the corresponding stabilizer groups  $K_p$  each in turn, and see what can be said about the associated representations.

### 11.3.1 Positive energy time-like orbits

One way to get negative values  $-m^2$  of the Casimir  $P^2$  is to take the vector p = (m, 0, 0, 0), m > 0 and generate an orbit  $\mathcal{O}_{(m,0,0,0)}$  by acting on it with the Lorentz group. This will be the upper, positive energy, sheet of the hyperboloid of two sheets

$$-p_0^2 + p_1^2 + p_2^2 + p_3^2 = -m^2$$

 $\mathbf{so}$ 

$$p_0 = \sqrt{p_1^2 + p_2^2 + p_3^2 + m^2}$$

The stabilizer group of  $K_{(m,0,0,0)}$  is the subgroup of SO(3,1) of elements of the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & \mathbf{0} \\ \mathbf{0} & R \end{pmatrix}$$

where  $R \in SO(3)$ , so  $K_{(m,0,0,0)} = SO(3)$ . Irreducible representations of this group are classified by the spin. For spin 0, points on the hyperboloid can be identified with positive energy solutions to a wave equation called the Klein-Gordon equation and functions on the hyperboloid both correspond to the space of all solutions of this equation and carry an irreducible representation of the Poincaré group. This case will be studied in detail in chapters ?? and ??. We will study the case of spin  $\frac{1}{2}$  in chapter ??, where one must use the double cover SU(2) of SO(3). The Poincaré group representation will be on functions on the orbit that take values in two copies of the spinor representation of SU(2). These will correspond to solutions of a wave equation called the massive Dirac equation. For choices of higher spin representations of the stabilizer group, one can again find appropriate wave equations and construct Poincaré group representations on their space of solutions (although additional subsidiary conditions are often needed) but we will not enter into this topic.

For p = (m, 0, 0, 0) the Pauli-Lubanski operator will be

$$W_0 = 0, \quad \mathbf{W} = -m\mathbf{J}$$

and the second Casimir operator will be

$$W^2 = m^2 J^2$$

The eigenvalues of  $W^2$  are thus proportional to the eigenvalues of  $J^2$ , the Casimir operator for the subgroup of spatial rotations. These are again given by the spin s, and will take the values s(s + 1). These eigenvalues classify representations consistently with the stabilizer group classification.

### 11.3.2 Negative energy time-like orbits

Starting instead with the energy-momentum vector p = (-m, 0, 0, 0), m > 0, the orbit  $\mathcal{O}_{(-m,0,0,0)}$  one gets is the lower, negative energy component of the hyperboloid

$$-p_0^2 + p_1^2 + p_2^2 + p_3^2 = -m^2$$

satisfying

$$p_0 = -\sqrt{p_1^2 + p_2^2 + p_3^2 + m^2}$$

Again, one has the same stabilizer group  $K_{(-m,0,0,0)} = SO(3)$  and the same constructions of wave equations of various spins and Poincaré group representations on their solution spaces as in the positive energy case. Since negative energies lead to unstable, unphysical theories, we will see that these representations are treated differently under quantization, corresponding physically not to particles, but to antiparticles.

### 11.3.3 Space-like orbits

One can get positive values  $m^2$  of the Casimir  $P^2$  by considering the orbit  $\mathcal{O}_{(0,0,0,m)}$  of the vector p = (0,0,0,m). This is a hyperboloid of one sheet,

satisfying the equation

$$-p_0^2 + p_1^2 + p_2^2 + p_3^2 = m^2$$

It is not too difficult to see that the stabilizer group of the orbit is  $K_{(0,0,0,m)} = SO(2,1)$ . This is isomorphic to the group  $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$ , and it has no finite dimensional unitary representation s. These orbits correspond physically to "tachyons", particles that move faster than the speed of light, and there is no known way to consistently incorporate them in a conventional theory.

### 11.3.4 The zero orbit

The simplest case where the Casimir  $P^2$  is zero is the trivial case of a point p = (0, 0, 0, 0). This is invariant under the full Lorentz group, so the orbit  $\mathcal{O}_{(0,0,0,0)}$  is just a single point and the stabilizer group  $K_{(0,0,0,0)}$  is the entire Lorentz group SO(3, 1). For each finite dimensional representation of SO(3, 1), one gets a corresponding finite dimensional representation of the Poincaré group, with translations acting trivially. These representations are not unitary, so not usable for our purposes. Note that these representations are not distinguished by the value of the second Casimir  $W^2$ , which is zero for all of them.

### 11.3.5 Positive energy null orbits

One has  $P^2 = 0$  not only for the zero-vector in momentum space, but for a three dimensional set of energy-momentum vectors, called the null-cone. By the term "cone" one means that if a vector is in the space, so are all products of the vector times a positive number. Vectors  $p = (p_0, p_1, p_2, p_3)$  are called "light-like" or "null" when they satisfy

$$p^2 = -p_0^2 + p_1^2 + p_2^2 + p_3^2 = 0$$

One such vector is  $p = (|\mathbf{p}|, 0, 0, |\mathbf{p}|)$  and the orbit of the vector under the action of the Lorentz group will be the upper half of the full null-cone, the half with energy  $p_0 > 0$ , satisfying

$$p_0 = \sqrt{p_1^2 + p_2^2 + p_3^2}$$

It turns out that the stabilizer group  $K_{|\mathbf{p}|,0,0,|\mathbf{p}|}$  of  $p = (|\mathbf{p}|,0,0,|\mathbf{p}|)$  is E(2), the Euclidean group of the plane. One way to see this is to use the matrix representation ?? which explicitly gives the action of the Poincaré Lie algebra on Minkowski space vectors, and note that

$$l_3, l_1 + k_2, l_2 - k_1$$

each act trivially on  $(|\mathbf{p}|, 0, 0, |\mathbf{p}|)$ .  $l_3$  is the infinitesimal spatial rotation about the 3-axis. Defining

$$b_1 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(l_1 + k_2), \quad b_2 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(l_2 - k_1)$$

and calculating the commutators

$$[b_1, b_2] = 0, \ [l_3, b_1] = b_2, \ [l_3, b_2] = -b_1$$

we see that these three elements of the Lie algebra are a basis of a Lie subalgebra isomorphic to the Lie algebra of E(2).

Recall from section ?? that there are two kinds of irreducible unitary representations of E(2):

- Representations such that the two translations act trivially. These are irreducible representations of SO(2), so one dimensional and characterized by an integer n (half-integers when the Poincaré g roup double cover is used).
- Infinite dimensional irreducible representations on a space of functions on a circle of radius *r*.

The first of these two cases corresponds to irreducible representations of the Poincaré group labeled by an integer n, which is called the "helicity" of the representation. Given the representation, n will be the eigenvalue of  $J_3$  acting on the energy-momentum eigenspace with energy-momentum ( $|\mathbf{p}|, 0, 0, |\mathbf{p}|$ ). We will in later chapters consider the cases n = 0 (massless scalars, wave equation the Klein-Gordon equation),  $n = \pm \frac{1}{2}$  (Weyl spinors, wave equation the Weyl equation), and  $n = \pm 1$  (photons, wave equation the Maxwell equations). The second sort of representation of E(2) corresponds to representations of the Poincaré group known as "continuous spin" representations, but these seem not to correspond to any known physical phenomena.

Calculating the components of the Pauli-Lubanski operator, one finds

$$W_0 = -|\mathbf{p}|J_3, \quad W_1 = -|\mathbf{p}|(J_1 + K_2), \quad W_2 = -|\mathbf{p}|(J_2 - K_1), \quad W_3 = -|\mathbf{p}|J_3$$

Defining

$$B_1 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} |\mathbf{p}| (J_1 + K_2), \quad B_2 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} |\mathbf{p}| (J_2 - K_1)$$

the second Casimir operator is given by

$$W^2 = 2|\mathbf{p}|(B_1^2 + B_2^2)$$

which is the Casimir operator for E(2). It takes non-zero values on the continuous spin representations, but is zero for the representations where E(2) translations act trivially. It does thus not distinguish between massless Poincaré representations of different helicities.

### 11.3.6 Negative energy null orbits

Looking instead at the orbit of  $p = (-|\mathbf{p}|, 0, 0, |\mathbf{p}|)$ , one gets the negative energy part of the null-cone. As with the time-like hyperboloids of non-zero mass m, these will correspond to antiparticles instead of particles, with the same classification as in the positive energy case.

### 11.4 For further reading

For an extensive discussion of the Poincaré group, its Lie algebra and representations, see [28]. Weinberg [30] (chapter 2) has some discussion of the representations of the Poincaré group on single-particle state spaces that we have classified here. Folland [8] (chapter 4.4) and Berndt [3] (chapter 7.5) discuss the construction of these representations using induced representation methods (as opposed to the construction as solution spaces of wave equations that we will use in following chapters).

# Bibliography

- Felix A. Berezin, *The method of second quantization*, Pure and Applied Physics, Vol. 24, Academic Press, 1966.
- [2] Felix. A. Berezin and Michael S. Marinov, Particle spin dynamics as the Grassmann variant of classical mechanics, Annals of Physics 104 (1977), no. 2, 336–362.
- [3] Rolf Berndt, Representations of linear groups, Vieweg, 2007.
- [4] Massimo Blasone, Giuseppe Vitiello, and Petr Jizba, *Quantum field theory* and its macroscopic manifestations, Imperial College Press, 2011.
- [5] Jonathan Dimock, Quantum mechanics and quantum field theory, Cambridge University Press, 2011.
- [6] John Earman and Doreen Fraser, Haag's theorem and its implications for the foundations of quantum field theory, Erkenntnis 64 (2006), no. 3, 305– 344.
- [7] Gerald B. Folland, *Harmonic analysis in phase space*, Annals of Mathematics Studies, vol. 122, Princeton University Press, 1989.
- [8] \_\_\_\_\_, Quantum field theory, Mathematical Surveys and Monographs, vol. 149, American Mathematical Society, 2008.
- [9] Eduardo Fradkin, Quantum field theory: an integrated approach, Princeton University Press, 2021.
- [10] Brian Hall, Lie groups, Lie algebras, and representations, second ed., Graduate Texts in Mathematics, vol. 222, Springer-Verlag, 2015.
- [11] Marc Henneaux and Claudio Teitelboim, Quantization of gauge systems, Princeton University Press, 1992.
- [12] Roger Howe and Eng Chye Tan, Non-abelian harmonic analysis, Springer-Verlag, 1992.
- [13] Alexandre A. Kirillov, Lectures on the orbit method, Graduate Studies in Mathematics, vol. 64, American Mathematical Society, 2004.

- [14] Tom Lancaster and Stephen J. Blundell, Quantum field theory for the gifted amateur, Oxford University Press, 2014.
- [15] H. Blaine Lawson, Jr. and Marie-Louise Michelsohn, Spin geometry, Princeton Mathematical Series, vol. 38, Princeton University Press, 1989.
- [16] Yuri I. Manin, Gauge field theory and complex geometry, Springer-Verlag, 1988.
- [17] Eckhard Meinrenken, Clifford algebras and Lie theory, Ergebnisse der Mathematik und ihrer Grenzgebiete. 3. Folge. A Series of Modern Surveys in Mathematics, vol. 58, Springer-Verlag, 2013.
- [18] Johnny T. Ottesen, Infinite dimensional groups and algebras in quantum physics, Lecture Notes in Physics Monographs., vol. 27, Springer-Verlag, 1995.
- [19] Roger Penrose, Twistor algebra, Journal of Mathematical Physics 8 (1967), 345–366.
- [20] Bjorn Poonen, Real representations, 2017.
- [21] Ian R. Porteous, *Clifford algebras and the classical groups*, Cambridge Studies in Advanced Mathematics, vol. 50, Cambridge University Press, 1995.
- [22] Andrew Pressley and Graeme Segal, *Loop groups*, Oxford Mathematical Monographs, Oxford University Press, 1986.
- [23] Graeme Segal, Notes on symplectic manifolds and quantization, 1999.
- [24] David Shale, Linear symmetries of free boson fields, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 103 (1962), 149–167.
- [25] David Shale and W. Forrest Stinespring, States of the Clifford algebra, Ann. of Math. (2) 80 (1964), 365–381.
- [26] Leon A. Takhtajan, Quantum mechanics for mathematicians, Graduate Studies in Mathematics, vol. 95, American Mathematical Society, 2008.
- [27] Michael E. Taylor, Noncommutative harmonic analysis, Mathematical Surveys and Monographs, vol. 22, American Mathematical Society, 1986.
- [28] Wu-Ki Tung, Group theory in physics, World Scientific, 1985.
- [29] R. S. Ward and Raymond O. Wells, Jr., Twistor geometry and field theory, Cambridge University Press, 1990.
- [30] Steven Weinberg, *The quantum theory of fields. Vol. I*, Cambridge University Press, 2005.
- [31] Peter Woit, Quantum theory, groups and representations, Springer, 2017.
- [32] Jean Zinn-Justin, *Path integrals in quantum mechanics*, Oxford Graduate Texts, Oxford University Press, 2010.